UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO
3 1761 01711810 0

THE CONTEMPORARY SCIENCE SERIES.

EDITED BY HAVELOCK ELLIS.

HYPNOTISM.

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

http://www.archive.org/details/hypnotism00molluoft

HYPNOTISM.

BY

ALBERT MOLL

(*OF BERLIN*).

MICROFILMED BY
UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO
LIBRARY
MASTER NEGATIVE NO.:
95.0023

LONDON:
WALTER SCOTT,
24, WARWICK LANE, PATERNOSTER ROW.
1891.



22682
2/4/92

CONTENTS.

PAGE

PREFACE ix, xi

CHAPTER I.

HISTORY OF HYPNOTISM 1

Empirical period—The first scientific systems—Mesmer—Animal magnetism in France and in Germany—Decline of animal magnetism—Braid and the electro-biologists—Occasional works about hypnotism—Hypnotism in Germany in 1880—The school of Nancy — Latest development of hypnotism in France, outside of France, in Germany.

CHAPTER II.

GENERAL CONSIDERATIONS 21

Examples of hypnosis—Terminology—Production of hypnosis — Psychical methods — Physical methods — Combined methods — The awakening — Disposition to hypnosis—Hypnoscope — Physical and mental aptitudes —Hypnosis without the consent of the subject—Percentage of hypnotizable persons—Stages of hypnosis.

CHAPTER III.

PAGE

THE SYMPTOMS OF HYPNOSIS 53

Division of psychical and physical symptoms—Definition of suggestibility—(1) PHYSIOLOGY : Voluntary muscular action —Suggestions — Fascination — Catalepsy by suggestion — Contractures, automatic movements—Ocular symptoms— Appearance of new reflex actions in hypnosis—Objective changes—Variations of the ordinary reflex movements—The organs of sense—Hallucinations of the senses—Negative hallucinations—Hyperæsthesia of the organs of sense— General sensations—Perception of pain—Mental condition —Involuntary muscular action—Pulse and Respiration— Suggestions — Secretion — Organic changes — Anatomical changes—Forel's experiments—(2) PSYCHOLOGY : Memory —Post-hypnotic memory—Suggestion during hypnosis and after hypnosis — Post-hypnotic suggestion — Estimation of time—Condition whilst carrying out the suggestion—Condition between awakening and carrying out the suggestion— Reasons given for the execution of the suggestion—Post-hypnotic suggestion without loss of memory—Activity of the intellect—Mechanical associations—Logical thinking in hypnosis — Rapid change of suggested ideas — Rapport— Consciousness and will — No loss of consciousness in hypnosis — Resistance to suggestions and successful control—Other expressions of the consciousness and will— Transitional forms of hypnosis—Training.

CHAPTER IV.

COGNATE STATES 192

Sleep—Dreams—Somnambulism—Mental derangements— Neuroses—Suggestions in the waking state—Hypnosis in animals—Fakirs.

CHAPTER V.

THE THEORY OF HYPNOTISM 218

General—Credulity — Appearance of expected results — Derangements of movement — Hallucinations—Rapport— Negative hallucinations—Memory—Post-hypnotic sugges-

PAGE

tion—Actions performed without, and contrary to, will—Actions with loss of memory of the command—Automatic writing—Adherence to appointed time—Further analogies of post-hypnotic suggestion—Post-hypnotic hallucinations—Other psychological theories—Inhibition during hypnosis—Time of reaction—Physiological theories—Heidenhain's theory—Circulation of blood in the brain—Physiological speculation.

CHAPTER VI.

SIMULATION 273

General principles—Points of difference between the schools of Charcot and of Nancy—Main points in judging the question of simulation—Limits of trustworthiness of single symptoms—Psychical symptoms—Probable signs of simulation.

CHAPTER VII.

THE MEDICAL ASPECTS OF HYPNOTISM 290

Empirical therapeutics of suggestion—Suggestion the main point of hypnosis—Objections to suggestive therapeutics—Objections, and the opposing party—Ewald's objection—The dangers of hypnosis and their prevention—Further objections—Indications and contra-indications—Interpretation of results—Rules for suggestive therapeutics—Importance of suggestion—Importance of psychology to the physician—Utilization of hypnotism in surgery and obstetrics—Utilization of hypnotism in teaching and education—Importance of hypnotism for psychology.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE LEGAL ASPECTS OF HYPNOTISM 334

Historical—Crimes committed on hypnotized subjects—Crimes committed by hypnotized subjects—Importance of hypnosis in civil law—Retroactive hallucinations—Forensic utilization of hypnotism—Refusal of testimony or confessions—Loss of memory in the waking state of what has happened during hypnosis—Legal proposals.

CHAPTER IX.

PAGE

ANIMAL MAGNETISM, ETC. 357

Definition of animal magnetism—Methods of magnetizing—Theories—Telepathy—Clairvoyance—Transference of senses—Heidenhain's experiments—Effect of the magnet in hypnosis—Historical—Transference—Polarization—Influence of the respiration—Action of drugs at a distance—Criticism of experiments—Sources of error.

INDEX OF CONTENTS 381

INDEX OF NAMES 393

BIBLIOGRAPHY 409

PREFACE

TO THE FIRST EDITION.

In writing this book I was guided by the wish to offer to the reader a survey of all that is most important in the whole province of hypnotism. While in the numerous and detailed works on this subject which have lately appeared, sometimes its therapeutics and sometimes its forensic significance have been exclusively brought forward, I, for my part, have endeavoured to treat hypnotism broadly and from various points of view, avoiding irrelevant matter; and, being aided by my own experiments, I was in a position to add much that was new to what was already known.

I here express my hearty thanks to Prof. August Forel, Director of the Cantonal Lunatic Asylum in Zürich, who placed several of his most valuable experiments at my disposal for this book; also to Dr. Max Dessoir, of Berlin, who has assisted me both

with his wide acquaintance with the literature of hypnotism and with much good advice; finally, to all who have in other ways helped me in the work.

A. MOLL.

BERLIN, *April*, 1889.

PREFACE

TO THE SECOND EDITION

I HAVE substantially enlarged the second edition of my book, and have completely remodelled several sections ; for example, the theoretical part. The appearance of some new works on hypnotism and some later experiments of my own made these alterations advisable.

I have willingly yielded to wishes expressed to me in numerous criticisms on the first edition. I cannot, however, yield to what several critics desired, namely, that I should write the book for physicians only, because I believe that hypnotism is a province of psychology, and is in consequence of as much interest to psychologists and lawyers as to doctors. In order, however, not to weary the latter with explanations of medical expressions inserted in the text, I shall give these in the index which is to be found at the end of the book.

It is a pleasant duty to offer my tribute of thanks to all those who have helped me with advice in the preparation of the second edition. I owe gratitude in particular to Prof. August Forel, of Zürich, and to Dr. Eduard Hartmann, of Gross-Lichterfeld, as well as to Drs. Max Dessoir and Arthur Sperling, of Berlin.

A. MOLL.

BERLIN, *January*, 1890.

HYPNOTISM.

CHAPTER I.

HISTORY OF HYPNOTISM.

IN order to understand the gradual development of modern hypnotism from animal magnetism, we must distinguish two points: firstly, that there are human beings who can exercise a personal influence over others, either by direct contact or even from a distance; and, secondly, the fact that particular psychical states can be induced in human beings by certain physical processes.

This second fact especially has long been known among the Oriental peoples, and was utilized by them for religious purposes. Kiesewetter attributes the early soothsaying by means of precious stones to hypnosis, which was induced by steadily gazing at the stones. This is also true of divination by looking into vessels and crystals, as the Egyptians have long been in the habit of doing, and as has often been done in Europe: by Cagliostro, for example. These hypnotic phenomena are also found to have existed several thousand years ago among the Persian magi (Fischer), as well as up to the present day among Indian yogis and fakirs, who throw themselves into

the hypnotic state by means of fixation of the gaze. The same thing has occurred since the eleventh century in many convents of the Greek Church (Fischer). Among the best known are the Hesychasts, or Omphalopsychics, of Mount Athos, who hypnotize themselves by gazing at the umbilicus. The fact has often been verified in popular opinion, apart from these religious customs, that it was possible to induce sleep by looking fixedly at a certain point; for example, at the tip of the nose. Hypnotic conditions appear often to occur among uncivilized peoples, as is clearly to be gathered from the information of many travellers, and as Bastian, a chief authority on ethnology, has particularly shown. He, as well as Stoll, has pointed out the near relationship of many phenomena among uncivilized populations to hypnotism. Bastian believes that a more exact study of hypnotism by individual travellers would be of great service to popular psychology; the phenomena which occur spontaneously among uncivilized populations could be more carefully examined and brought into closer relation to hypnotism.

Independently of this there has existed at all times in many quarters the belief that particular individuals could influence their fellows by the exercise of certain powers. This influence could be used as well for good as for evil. Of the first use we are reminded by the laying on of hands in benediction; also by the healing by touch which was obtained by the old Egyptians and other Oriental nations: numerous old monuments testify to this. If the meaning of many of them is not clear, in the case of others hardly a doubt exists as to the right interpretation. The Ebers

Papyrus also, which represents the state of Egyptian medicine before the year 1552 B.C., contains a statement, according to which the laying of hands on the head of a patient plays a part in his treatment.[1] We see the same thing later in the cures which King Pyrrhus and the Emperor Vespasian are said to have effected.

It is known that Francis I. of France, and other French kings up to Charles X., healed by the imposition of hands. We see here already that this individual power took effect through contact; however, this appears not to have been always necessary, as is witnessed by the widespread and continued belief in sorcerers, who could bewitch other persons. The belief in sorcerers indicates that contact was by no means always necessary to produce an effect, which, it is pretended, could be induced even from a great distance.

The question here is only of solitary facts in which no scientific system is discoverable. A system presents itself to us only after the end of the Middle Ages. It develops itself out of the doctrine of the influence of the stars upon men which, as is known, astrology puts forward. Even nowadays we find remains of it, especially in the belief in the influence which the moon is supposed to exercise. It is well known that many people expect warts and so forth to disappear as the moon wanes; while more modern doctors of mental diseases called in the influence of the moon to explain special periodical mental disturbances.

At the end of the Middle Ages, Theophrastus

[1] For the knowledge of this I have to thank a private communication from Dr. Heinrich Joachim, of Berlin, who will make a German translation of the Ebers Papyrus.

Paracelsus in particular (about 1530) came forward with the theory of the effect of the heavenly bodies on mankind, more especially on their diseases. Out of this the belief gradually developed itself that not only did the stars influence men, but that men also mutually influenced each other—a belief which, as we have already seen, had already arisen sporadically.

Van Helmont taught with more precision that man possessed a power by means of which he could magnetically affect others, particularly the sick. Perhaps Helmont obtained the main features of his doctrine from Goclenius.

The Scotchman Maxwell maintained something of the same kind later (about 1600). He attributed to the human excreta, and also to mummies, an effect upon human beings; they could be utilized for the curing of diseases (sympathetic cures); also men could cure themselves of diseases by transferring them to animals or plants. A remnant of this system developed by Maxwell still exists in country places, where people occasionally apply excreta to their wounds. Maxwell assumed in particular a vital spirit of the universe (*spiritus vitalis*), by means of which all bodies were related to each other. This vital spirit seems to be the same thing which Mesmer later called the universal fluid.

In the beginning of the eighteenth century we find Santanelli in Italy asserting a like proposition. Everything material possesses a radiating atmosphere which operates magnetically. Santanelli, however, recognized the great influence of the imagination (Avé Lallemant).

Although the foundation of the doctrine of animal magnetism was thus laid, universal attention was

first drawn to it by Mesmer,[1] a Viennese doctor (1734–1815). He studied in his dissertation the influence of the planets upon human bodies. At the beginning Mesmer made great use of the magnet in the treatment of diseases. In the year 1775 he sent out a circular letter, particularly addressed to several academies. In this he maintained the existence of animal magnetism, by means of which persons could influence each other; he, however, distinguished animal magnetism completely from the magnetism of metals, which later he ceased to employ. The only academy which replied to him was that of Berlin, at Sulzer's instigation, and its reply was unfavourable. However, about this time Mesmer was nominated a member of the Academy of Bavaria.

Mesmer made much use of "animal magnetism" in the treatment of diseases. He cured at first by contact, but believed later that different objects of wood, glass, iron, and so forth, were also capable of receiving the magnetism. Consequently he made use of these as means for conveying his magnetism, especially later in Paris, where he went in 1778, chiefly in consequence of the enmities he had aroused in Vienna. In Paris Mesmer constructed the *baquet*, which was magnetized by him, and which was supposed to transmit the magnetism. Bailly represents it as a very complicated apparatus; an oak chest or

[1] The name is often written "Messmer," instead of "Mesmer;" the latter spelling is, however, decidedly the correct one. At least it is so found in the book which Mesmer himself brought out—"General Explanations of Magnetism," by Mesmer, Carlsruhe, 1815. Mesmer's friend, Wolfart, and his biographer, Justinus Kerner, write the name also with one *s*.

tub, with appendages of iron, &c. Mesmer found many adherents in Paris—Dr. Deslon joined him first of all—but he also encountered many opponents. Several scientific Commissions which examined the question pronounced, in 1784, against the existence of animal magnetism, particularly the one to which Bailly was reporter. One of the members of the Commission, Jussieu, made, however, a separate report, which was not considered decisive. No one, however, denied that far-reaching effects were produced by imagination; it was only denied that there was a physical force resembling true magnetism. In spite of all attacks, Mesmer made disciples. His pupils and successors are generally called mesmerists, and the doctrine of animal magnetism is also called mesmerism, vital magnetism, bio-magnetism, or zoo-magnetism.

I do not wish to join the contemptible group of Mesmer's professional slanderers. He is dead, and can no longer defend himself from those who disparage him without taking into consideration the circumstances or the time in which he lived.

Against the universal opinion that he was avaricious, I remark that in Vienna, as well as later in Mörsburg and Paris, he always helped the poor without reward. I believe that he erred in his teaching, but think it is just to attack this only, and not his personal character. Mesmer was much slandered in his lifetime, and these attacks upon him have been continued till quite lately. Let us, however, consider more closely in what his alleged great crime consisted. He believed in the beginning that he could heal by means of a magnet, and later that he could do so by means of a personal indwelling force which he could transfer to the *baquet*. This was evidently his firm belief, and he never made a secret of it. Others believed either that the patient's mere imagination played a part, or that Mesmer produced his effects by some concealed means. Then, by degrees, arose the legend that Mesmer possessed some secret by means of which

he was able to produce effects on people such as the cure of diseases, but that he would not reveal it. In reality the question was not at all of a secret purposely kept back by him, since he imagined, and always insisted, that he exercised some individual force. Finally, if he used this supposititious individual force for the purpose of earning money, he did nothing worse than do modern physicians and proprietors of institutions who likewise do not follow their calling from pure love of their neighbour, but seek to earn their own living by it, as they are quite justified in doing. Mesmer did not behave worse than those who nowadays discover a new drug, and regard the manufacture of it as a means of enriching themselves. Let us at last be just and cease to slander Mesmer, who did only what is done by the people just mentioned. That those who defame Mesmer know the least about his teaching, and have the least acquaintance with his works, is very clearly shown by a whole series of books about modern hypnotism.

A follower of Mesmer, Chastenet de Puységur, whose good faith cannot be doubted (Dechambre) discovered, in 1784, a state which was named artificial somnambulism. Apart from some falsely interpreted phenomena (thought-transference, clairvoyance, &c.) the chief characteristic of this state was a sleep, in which the ideas and actions of the magnetized person could be directed by the magnetizer. Whether Mesmer knew of this condition or not is uncertain, but it seems to me probable that he did. About the same time Pétetin, a doctor of Lyons, occupied himself with magnetism; besides catalepsy Pétetin describes phenomena of sense transference (hearing with the stomach). The French Revolution and the wars repressed the investigation of magnetism in France till about the year 1813.

In Germany animal magnetism was recognized at the same time in two different places—on the Upper Rhine and in Bremen. In the year 1786

Lavater paid a visit to Bremen, and exhibited the magnetizing processes to several doctors, particularly to Wienholt, through whom Albers, Bicker, and later also Heineken, were likewise made acquainted with magnetism. Bremen was for a long time a focus of the new doctrine; the town was often even brought into bad repute in the rest of Germany on account of the general dislike to animal magnetism. About the same time the doctrine of animal magnetism spread from Strassburg over the Rhine provinces; Böckmann, of Carlsruhe, and Gmelin, of Heilbronn, occupied themselves with it; later they were joined by Pezold, of Dresden. Getting encouragement from Bremen, people began to make experiments in other parts of Germany. Selle, of Berlin, brought forward, in 1789, a series of experiments made at the Charité, by which he confirmed a part of the alleged phenomena, but excluded all that was super-normal (clairvoyance).

Notwithstanding the early dislike to it magnetism finally gained ground in Germany. In particular animal magnetism flourished much in Germany during the first twenty years of this century. In Austria only, it met with ill-fortune; the exercise of magnetism was even forbidden in the whole of Austria in 1815. I do not enter more fully into the details of the teaching of different individuals, as they have no close connection with hypnotism. In the main two different tendencies can be distinguished—one critical and scientific, and the other mystical (Avé Lallemant). While the first had the preponderance in the beginning, later on the last came to the fore and led to the downfall of magnetism. Besides the scientific inquirers already mentioned I may name Treviranus, Schelling, Kieser, Passavant, Kluge; also Pfaff, who attacked

clairvoyance in particular ; and further, Stieglitz and Hufeland. The last, who was at first a decided opponent, acknowledged certain facts later on, but excluded all the super-normal. He thus drew upon himself the hatred of the mystics. Even in the year 1834 Hufeland expressed himself as recognizing, to a certain extent, the existence of animal magnetism and its value in healing. Among the mystics I may mention Ziermann, Eschenmayer, Justinus Kerner, the well-known poet and editor of the "Seeress of Prevorst." Wolfart of Berlin must here be especially mentioned.

In the year 1812 the Prussian Government sent Wolfart to Mesmer at Frauenfeld, in order that he might there make himself acquainted with the subject. Wolfart came back a thorough adherent of Mesmer, introduced magnetism into the hospital treatment, and afterwards became a professor at the university. A prize which was offered by the Berlin Academy of Sciences, at the request of the Prussian Government, for an Essay on Animal Magnetism was, it appears, withdrawn. However, magnetism flourished so much at that time in Berlin that, as Wurm relates, the Berlin physicians placed a monument on the grave of Mesmer at Mörsburg, and theological candidates received instruction in physiology, pathology, and the treatment of sickness by vital magnetism. It was Mesmer's idea to teach it to the clergy. The well-known physician Koreff, also, whom Varnhagen von Ense mentions as one of the most gifted of men, and of whom Cuvier said that if he were not already in Paris he must be entreated to come there, interested himself much in magnetism, and often made use of it for healing purposes so long as he lived in Berlin.

In the rest of Germany also, many inquirers

occupied themselves with animal magnetism; in several universities a knowledge of the phenomena was spread by means of lectures—for example, by Wolfart in Berlin, and by Bartels in Breslau. As many authors inform us, a royal order in February, 1817, made magnetization in Prussia the privilege of physicians only; but in the official code of laws nothing is to be found on the subject. At the same time such laws were enacted in other countries. Magnetism was introduced everywhere, especially in Russia and Denmark. In Switzerland and Italy it was at first received with less sympathy.

After Mesmer had left France in the time of the Revolution, in order, after prolonged travels, to settle himself at his native place on the Bodensee, magnetism only regained its importance in France at the beginning of the present century. In Germany there were more physicians who turned to the study of animal magnetism, which in France fell for the most part into the hands of laymen. Among the most earnest inquirers Deleuze must here be mentioned. But the whole doctrine received a great impetus through the Abbé Faria, who came to Paris from India. In 1814–15 he showed by experiments, whose results he published, that no unknown force was necessary for the production of the phenomena; the cause of the sleep, said he, was in the person who was to be sent to sleep; all was subjective. This is the main principle of hypnotism and of suggestion, of which Faria even then made use in inducing sleep. Two other investigators in France must be mentioned, Bertrand and Noizet, who paved the way for the doctrine of suggestion, in spite of much inclination to animal magnetism. In 1820 experiments were begun in the Paris hospitals, chiefly under the

direction of Du Potet. At the proposal of Foissac, and at the recommendation of Husson, the Paris Academy of Medicine in 1826 appointed a Commission to examine the question of animal magnetism. The Commission worked for six years and pronounced a favourable opinion in 1831; but the Academy was evidently not convinced. In spite of several further experiments, for example those of Berna, no other result was obtained. Particularly because the chief emphasis was laid on the mystical side of the question the struggle was made substantially easier to the opponents of mesmerism, among whom Dubois was prominent.

The candidates for the Burdin prize for clairvoyance, Pigeaire, Hublier, and Teste, failed to obtain it; and in 1840 the Academy declined to discuss the question further.

Meanwhile, although in Germany another series of investigators were busying themselves with mesmerism, on the whole, after about 1820, the belief in magnetism declined more and more; the cognate phenomena also received hardly any attention. This retrogression was caused as much by the rise of the exact natural sciences as by the unscientific and uncritical hankering after mystical phenomena, which could not but revolt serious investigators. Mesmerism flourished relatively the longest in Bremen and in Hamburg, where Siemers was its advocate; also in Bavaria, where Hensler and Ennemoser, between the years 1830 and 1840, still represented it. In other towns we likewise still find a number of thoughtful inquirers, who allowed themselves to be influenced neither by the passion for the wonderful nor by the attacks of the principal opponents of magnetism, and who sought to defend their position in a thoroughly

scientific manner; Most, Fr. Fischer, and Hirschel, may be mentioned. It may also be emphatically insisted that a series of philosophers have believed firmly and persistently in the reality of the phenomena, although not much regard has been paid to this fact. They have even founded scientific systems upon the phenomena: *i.e.*, Schopenhauer, Carus, Pfnor. Although magnetism lost many adherents in the scientific world, among the people the belief in the mysterious force continued prevalent. The more science drew back the more shameless became the cheating and fraud; although in Germany there were fewer attempts to make money by it than in France. The abuse grew so strong that the Catholic Church several times came forward to interfere. But the more the extravagance and cheating increased the less inclined were serious-minded persons to interest themselves in these matters.

In England, in spite of the efforts of the London physicians Elliotson and Ashburner, magnetism could get no footing. When the French magnetizer, La Fontaine, exhibited magnetic experiments in Manchester in 1841, Braid, a doctor of that place, interested himself in the question. He showed, like Faria, but with more method, that the phenomena were of subjective nature. By carefully fixing the eyes upon any object a state of sleep was induced, which Braid called "Hypnotism." [1]

At first Braid considered hypnotism to be identical with the mesmeric states, but he soon gave up this view; he was of opinion that the two conditions were only analogous, and he left mesmerism in an inde-

[1] This name was not, however, altogether new, as already Hénin de Cuvillers had talked of "hypnoscope" and "hypnobat," with reference to magnetic states (Max Dessoir).

pendent position by the side of hypnotism. Braid was acquainted with the cataleptic phenomena, and certain suggestions, and used hypnotism therapeutically; in particular he used it to perform painless surgical operations. Already, earlier, mesmerism had been several times made use of in surgical operations. In the result we see mesmerism and Braidism, as the state investigated by Braid is occasionally called, used by different persons for the like purpose. Among those who used animal magnetism or hypnotism in surgery, the following deserve to be mentioned: Loysel, Fontan, Topham, Joly, Ribaud, Kiaro (according to Max Dessoir), Varges, Herzog. Hypnotism, however, found no general acceptation, in spite of the fact that a well-known physiologist, Carpenter, as well as Laycock, James Simpson, Mayo, and others, confirmed the facts.

In America, meanwhile, animal magnetism had taken root; New Orleans was, for a long time, its chief centre. A few years later than Braid, Grimes appeared in the United States, and, independently of Braid, obtained like results. His methods were not essentially different from those of Braid; the states produced by Grimes were called electro-biological. Among his adherents Dods and Stone must be mentioned. In 1850 Darling came from America to England, where he exhibited the phenomena of electro-biology; their identity with those of hypnotism was soon recognized. Durand de Gros,[1] a French doctor who had lived in America, returned in 1853 to Europe, and exhibited the phenomena of electro-biology in several countries, but aroused little interest.

Braid's discovery was first made known in Bordeaux by Azam, in 1859. Encouraged by Bazin and mocked

[1] He wrote under the pseudonym of Philips.

by others, Azam made some hypnotic experiments; he communicated the results to Broca in Paris. The latter discussed hypnotism before the *Académie des Sciences*. It was made use of several times to perform painless operations; Velpeau, Follin, and Guérineau in particular made experiments. Other physicians, Demarquay and Giraud-Teulon, as well as Berend in Berlin, Pincus in Glogau, and Heyfelder in St. Petersburg, showed the slight value of hypnotism for surgery. In consequence of this it found no acceptance in medicine at that time. The experiments of Lasègue in 1865, when he obtained cataleptic phenomena by closing the eyes, aroused no particular interest.

Meanwhile, Liébeault, who later removed to Nancy, had made himself familiar with the phenomena of hypnotism and animal magnetism. The last he endeavoured to refute, and he became the real founder of the therapeutics of suggestion. His book, published in 1866 (Du Sommeil, &c.), which is even to-day very well worth reading, contains his ideas; they remained little known, and the author was much laughed at. Independently of him Charles Richet came forward in Paris in 1875 to contend for the real existence of hypnotism, which he called "Somnambulisme provoqué."

In the year 1878 Charcot began his public classes, in which he directed attention to the physical states of hystero-epileptics during hypnosis; in 1881 Paul Richer published, in his book on "La grande hystérie," many experiments performed on the lines of Charcot. Among the later pupils of Charcot I should name: Binet, Féré, Gilles de la Tourette, Babinski, Barth, Bourneville, Regnard.

In 1880 many investigators in Germany, particularly

Weinhold, Opitz, and Rühlmann in Chemnitz, Heidenhain, and Berger in Breslau, besides Möbius, Benedikt, Eulenburg, Senator, Adamkiewicz, Börner, Meyersohn, and Bäumler, occupied themselves with the subject, incited thereto by the exhibitions of Hansen. The investigations of hypnotism in animals, published in 1872 by Czermak, and after him by Preyer, aroused no lasting interest. The movement of 1880 also soon ceased, although Preyer often pointed out the importance of Braidism.

The researches of Charcot likewise had little effect upon the further pursuit of the inquiry—as little as had the book of Prosper Despine on Somnambulism, which appeared in 1880. It is true that in some hospitals investigations were undertaken, particularly by Dumontpallier in Paris, by Pitres in Bordeaux, also by Ladame in Geneva, and later by Binswanger in Jena ; these researches were, however, sporadic.

Only when a second medical school in France—that of Nancy — approached the subject, did the interest become more general. Prof. Bernheim, of Nancy, who, incited by Dumont, had studied the question with Liébeault, and had accepted the latter's views, published a book, "De la Suggestion," &c., in 1884. He gave in it examples of the curative effects of hypnotism, the phenomena of which, he says, are entirely of a psychical nature. Besides this, in Nancy, Beaunis worked at the physiology of hypnotism, and Liégeois at the forensic side of the question. Then followed in France the contest between the schools of Charcot and of Nancy, which is not yet entirely settled ; the latter, however, has gained ground more and more.

People began to busy themselves with hypnotism, in other countries as well as France, chiefly on the

lines of the school of Nancy. It is true that as has already been mentioned, the study of hypnotism had been begun in various countries in connection with the work of Charcot. As, however, in consequence of the rather one-sided standpoint of these investigations, the different inquirers failed to find any lasting satisfaction, even the name of Charcot was powerless to give a general extension to the study of hypnotism. Only when the school of Nancy created a surer basis for hypnotism by a profounder psychological conception could people elsewhere begin to devote themselves on a larger scale to the study of it. In France itself the importance of the Nancy investigators was more and more recognized. A. Voisin, Bérillon, and numerous other experimenters occupied themselves with the subject, and even those who had at first considered the experiments of Charcot to be of higher value turned in large numbers to the school of Nancy. Hypnotism found an entrance to other countries, and it appears that in the north of Europe a relatively greater number of investigators interested themselves in it than in France. In Belgium the eminent psychologist Delbœuf, of Liège, smoothed the way for it; numerous physicians—Van Renterghem, Van Eeden, De Jong, and others—made use of hypnotism in Holland for curative purposes. In Denmark, Sweden, and Norway we find also a series of inquirers — Johannessen, Sell, Fränkel, Carlsen, Schleisner, Velander, and most particularly Wetterstrand, of Stockholm, who uses hypnotism therapeutically to a very great extent; also in Russia, where Stembo and Tokarski should be noticed. In Greece, Italy, and Spain, where Pulido used suggestion therapeutically many years before

Bernheim, hypnotism is gaining in importance. In England there exists a society of private investigators—the Society for Psychical Research—which, besides examining certain mysterious phenomena, also studies hypnotism. Gurney and F. Myers must here be especially mentioned. Before this, in England, Hack Tuke had often called attention to hypnotism and its therapeutic value.

In other quarters of the globe, especially in America, hypnotism has also awakened great interest. Beard had already long ago interested himself in the question. Unluckily his investigations are not known to the extent which they certainly merit. An American Society for Psychical Research has also been formed in the United States.[1] In several of the South American States serious inquirers have turned to the study of hypnotic phenomena ; for example, Octavio Maira and David Benavente in Chili.

Meanwhile, through Forel, hypnotism had gained ground, more particularly in Switzerland, and there is no doubt that the great movement spread to Germany from thence. Obersteiner of Vienna, Fränkel of Dessau, and Möbius, had already endeavoured to draw attention to hypnotism in Germany, by clear and impartial reports. Lesser experiments in therapeutics had also been made by Creutzfeldt, Wiebe, Fischer, and Berkhan. But a really stirring activity has only just lately set in ; it began about two years ago, and was the result of the publications of Forel, which appeared in the German periodicals. They demonstrate the great importance of hypnotism for therapeutics. The essential importance of suggestion had not hitherto had suffi-

[1] Now affiliated to the English Society.

cient stress laid upon it, and in consequence many hypnotic experiments may have remained fruitless. Many other investigators, following the example of Forel, have made experiments in medical treatment by hypnotism in Germany lately; among them may be especially mentioned: Sperling, Nonne, Michael, Hess, Schrenck-Notzing, Hösslin, Baierlacher (who became known by his discovery of reaction of degeneration, and who, unfortunately, died a short time ago), Corval, Schuster, Hirt, Ad. Barth, Brügelmann. We find likewise a number of physicians in Austria active in the same field; Krafft-Ebing, Freud, Frey, Schnitzler, and F. Müller may be named. Other men—for example, Ziemssen, Seeligmüller, Köberlin—set their faces most decidedly against the therapeutic use of hypnotism. Other authors, again, worked at the particular subjects which have a relation to hypnotism without laying special stress on its therapeutic value; and here the works of Forel, Lilienthal, and Rieger must be named, which inquired into the legal side of the question. Krafft-Ebing published an extremely detailed experimental study of one case; Max Dessoir compiled a valuable Bibliography of Modern Hypnotism; further, Bleuler, Hückel, Maack, Weiss, Sallis, Dreher, may be mentioned.

In spite of the great importance of hypnotism to therapeutics, I think it a great mistake when some doctors fix the therapeutic value of hypnotism as the standard by which it is to be judged; and here another factor—the founding of an experimental psychology—may be well taken into consideration. As a matter of fact, a large number of investigators have recognized the great value of hypnotism, particularly in this direction—above all,

Krafft-Ebing, Forel, Max Dessoir; and several scientific societies have been formed in Germany after the pattern of the above-mentioned English Society for Psychical Research, in the programme of which it is essentially the use of hypnotism in the carrying out of psychological experiments which plays the chief part. Such are the Psychological Society in Munich and the Society for Experimental Psychology in Berlin, to which we already owe a series of remarkable works by Max Dessoir, Bastian, Hellwald, and Bentivegni.

Hypnotism has, moreover, made its entrance into the lecture-rooms of several German universities; lectures are delivered about it in Berlin, by the well-known physiologist, Preyer, and at Freyburg, in Baden, by Münsterberg, a distinguished psychologist. In order to facilitate a general discussion of the most important questions in the domain of hypnotism, a Congress met in Paris in 1889, where nearly all civilized nations were represented, and where a substantial clearing-up of opinions on some important points was attained. In general it may be said that the views of the school of Nancy carried the day.

In any case hypnotism has for the time won great importance, as may be estimated from the fact that it influences even literary circles. As in former days animal magnetism provided Alexander Dumas and Balzac with material for romances, so in later times several authors have chosen their themes out of the domain of hypnotism. Those who have become best known are Claretie, Belot, Meding, Epheyre. Finally, it must be mentioned that animal magnetism, out of which hypnotism has developed itself, has retained some adherents in the scientific world—F.

Myers, Richet, Langley; so that at present we can distinguish three great schools with many points of transition (Max Dessoir): (1) The school of Charcot; (2) the school of Nancy; and (3) the school of the mesmerists.

CHAPTER II.

GENERAL CONSIDERATIONS.

IN order to give the reader an idea of the phenomena of hypnotism it will be best, first of all, to describe a few experiments. The phenomena will in this way be made more comprehensible than by means of any number of definitions.

First Experiment. I begin the experiments with a young man of twenty. I request him to seat himself on a chair, and give him a button to hold, telling him to look at it fixedly. After three minutes his eyelids fall; he tries in vain to open his eyes, which are fast closed; his hand, which until now has grasped the button, drops upon his knee. I assure him that it is impossible for him to open his eyes. (He makes vain efforts to open them.) I now say to him, "Your hands are stuck fast to your knee; you cannot possibly raise them." (He raises his hands, however.) I continue to converse with him; I find that he is perfectly conscious, and I can discover no essential change in him whatever. I raise one of his arms; directly I let go, he drops it as he pleases. Upon which I blow upon his eyes, which open at once, and he is in the same state as before the experiment. The young man remembers all that I have said to him. The only striking thing is, there-

fore, that he could not open his eyes, and that he feels a certain degree of fatigue.

Second Experiment. This is a woman of fifty-three. When she has seated herself on a chair I place myself before her ; I raise my hands, and move them downwards, with the palms towards her, from the top of the head to about the pit of the stomach. I hold my hands so that they may not touch her, at a distance of from two to four centimetres. As soon as my hands come to the lowest part of the stroke I carry them in a wide sweep with outspread arms up over the subject's head. I then repeat exactly the same movements ; that is, passes from above downwards, close to the body, and continue this for about ten minutes. At the end of this time the subject is sitting with closed eyes, breathing deeply and peacefully. When I ask her to raise her arms, she raises them only slightly ; they then fall down again heavily. When I ask her how she feels, she explains that she is very tired. I forbid her to open her eyes. (She makes useless attempts to open them.) Now I lift up her right arm ; it remains in the air, even after I have let go. I command her to drop her arm. (She drops it.) I lift it again, and again it remains in the air ; upon which I request her to drop her arm, declaring at the same time that she cannot do it. (She now makes vain efforts to drop her arm, but it remains in the air.) The same thing happens with the other arm. When I forbid her she is unable to drop it ; she cannot pronounce her own name directly I have assured her that she is dumb. (She only makes movements with her mouth, without producing any sound.) I tell her that now she can speak. (She speaks at once.) I say to her : " You hear music." (The woman shakes her head to show

that she hears no music.) I wake her by passes from below, upwards, over the surface of her body, turning the back of the hand towards her. (She now opens her eyes, and can control all her movements.)

We see here, then, that not only are the eyes closed during hypnosis, but that all sorts of different movements become impossible to the subject when I forbid them.

Third Experiment. This is with a boy of sixteen, whom I have hypnotized several times. I request him to look me straight in the eyes. After he has done this for some time I take him by the hand and draw him along with me. Then I let go, but our eyes remain fixed on each other's. Then I lift up my right arm. (The boy does the same.) I raise my left arm. (He does the same.) I make him understand by a gesture that he must kneel down. (He does so.) He tries to rise, but does not succeed so long as I look at him, and fix him to the floor by a movement of the hand. Finally I cease to look at him; the charm is at once broken.

We see here, then, a young man whose movements take the character of imitation, and whose eyes at the same time are wide open and fixed upon mine.

Fourth Experiment. Mr. X., forty-one years old, seats himself on a chair. I tell him that he must try to sleep. "Think of nothing but that you are to go to sleep." After some seconds I continue: "Now your eyelids are beginning to close; your eyes are growing more and more fatigued; the lids quiver more and more. You feel tired all over; your arms go to sleep; your legs grow tired; a feeling of heaviness and the desire for sleep take possession of your whole body. Your eyes close; your head feels duller; your thoughts grow more and more confused. Now you

can no longer resist; now your eyelids are closed. Sleep!" After the eyelids have closed I ask him if he can open them. (He tries to do so, but they are too heavy.) I raise his left arm high in the air. (It remains in the air, and cannot be brought down in spite of all his efforts.) I ask him if he is asleep. "Yes." "Fast asleep?" "Yes." "Do you hear the canary singing?" "Yes." "Now you hear the concert?" "Certainly." Upon this I take a black cloth and put it into his hand. "You feel this dog quite plainly?" "Quite plainly." "Now you can open your eyes. You will see the dog clearly. Then you will go to sleep again, and not wake till I tell you." (He opens his eyes, looks at the imaginary dog and strokes it.) I take the cloth out of his hand, and lay it on the floor. (He stands up and reaches out for it.) Although he is in my room, when I tell him that he is in the Zoological Gardens he believes it and sees trees, and so on.

In this case X. is thrown into the hypnotic state by my arousing in his mind an image of the sleep. This manner of hypnotizing is used by the Nancy investigators, and may be called the method of Nancy. The subject is completely without a will of his own. It is not only possible in his case to prevent the most various movements by a mere prohibition, but I can also control his sense perceptions. On my assurance, he thinks he hears a canary, or hears music. He takes a black cloth for a dog, and believes himself to be in the Zoological Gardens when he is in my room. But the following phenomenon is still more striking. X. hears all that I say to him, and allows himself to be influenced by me in every way. Yet two other men, A. and B., who are present, appear not to be observed by the hypnotic at all. A. lifts

up the arm of the subject; the arm falls loosely down, and when A. desires the arm to remain in the air the subject takes no notice. He obeys my orders only, and is *en rapport* with me only. In order to wake him I now call to him: "Wake up!" He wakes at once, but only remembers going to sleep; of what happened during the sleep he knows nothing.

I interrupt here for a time the description of the experiments; I shall describe others in the course of this work, and shall occasionally return to those already depicted. I will merely remark that in all these experiments, however different they might be, the voluntary movements were always inhibited, that in one case hallucinations of the senses could be induced, and that it was possible for me in all cases to converse with the subject, and we could understand each other.

I wished to bring forward these examples in order that the reader might understand to a certain extent, in spite of the absence of living subjects, what different states are included in the idea of hypnosis, and how it is induced and terminated. The above experiments are typical, and every one who makes proper experiments can always repeat them.

At the conclusion of these experiments I add a short Terminology, which, however, is by no means complete, as some particular ideas can only be made clear in the further course of the work.

I mean by *hypnosis* the state into which the subjects were thrown during the experiments described above.

Hypnotism is not the name of the state itself, but of the whole science which deals with the phenomena of this state.

A person in the hypnotic state is called a *hypnotic*, or *subject*.

A *hypnotist* is a man who hypnotizes for scientific purposes. A *hypnotizer* is a man who makes hypnotism a profession.

The different commands which are given to the subjects in the experiments described, the prompting and persuasion, are called *suggestion*, a word to which I shall return, and which I shall define more exactly later on.

I shall use the phrase, "to suggest" for the giving of these hints or promptings.

If the suggestion takes effect it is said, from the point of view of hypnotism, that the subject is under the influence of suggestion.

There are several methods of inducing hypnosis, as can be gathered from the above examples.

In order to make a systematic survey, we divide these methods into two groups—the mental and the physical.

The mental methods induce hypnosis by giving a particular direction to the subject's imagination; this is done either by concentrating the attention upon an arbitrary point (Braid), or by raising an image of the hypnotic state in the subject's mind. The latter is most easily done by speech, as we have seen in the above four examples. Liébeault originated the process, which deserves particular attention, as by the use of it unpleasant accompanying phenomena are more surely avoided. As a matter of course, the methods are slightly modified to suit special cases, because individual character plays an incomparably larger part in mental states than in ordinary physiological investigations. Naturally, it

is quite possible to call up the image of the hypnotic states by other means than speech, and thus to induce them, by the influence of imitation, for example. The hypnotic state is occasionally induced by the mere sight of others in that condition, as well as by speech. The recollection of earlier hypnoses has the same effect; upon this fact depends the induction of hypnosis by means of letters, or of the telephone (Liégeois).

It is certain that these mental influences play a large part in hypnosigenesis,[1] that is, in the origination and production of hypnosis. It is equally sure that they suffice in many cases to induce hypnosis, particularly when the person concerned has already been hypnotized. Bernheim and Forel even consider the mental factor as indispensable to hypnosis; they hold the opinion that all the other methods mentioned below only succeed when they are of a kind to call up the picture of hypnosis. As, under certain circumstances which we shall examine later, the hypnosis may be a momentary one (that is, may pass away quickly), and as further in certain circumstances it need only consist of one solitary recognizable symptom, the representation necessary for the purpose need not be a very complicated picture (v. Bentivegni). Under some circumstances the mere idea that an arm has lost the power of motion is enough to cause hypnosis, of which precisely this loss of motion is the only, or the most important, symptom.

[1] Although the terminology up to the present time is very deficient, I will not make use of new expressions. Only instead of "hypnogen" and "hypnogenesis" (= induction of sleep), I shall use "hypnosigen" and "hypnosigenesis" (= induction of hypnotic sleep). "Hypnogen" is derived from ὕπνος—sleep—and is often used for "sleep-producing." "Hypnosigen" is derived from hypnosis; and its use will prevent confusion.

Here belongs also autohypnosis, or self-hypnosis. In this the idea of the hypnosis is not aroused by another person, but the subject generates the image himself. This can only happen by an act of will. Just as the will is otherwise able to produce particular thoughts, so it can allow the idea of hypnosis to become so powerful that finally hypnosis is induced; this is, however, rare. Autohypnosis generally takes place in consequence of some incident by means of which the idea of the hypnosis is produced; this often happens when the subject has been frequently hypnotized. It is possible that some states of sleep which are generally considered pathological, belong to autohypnosis.

Faria formerly made use of a mental method to obtain hypnosis. After he had strained the attention of the subject as much as possible, he called out suddenly, "Sleep!" Liébeault substantially developed and completed this process, Bernheim made it more universally known.

I will now speak of the physical methods, which for a long time were the only ones used. They consist of certain stimuli of sight, hearing, and touch. Taste and smell (Binet, Féré) have been rarely tried, and have generally given negative results. The best known is the so-called method of Braid. The hypnosis is caused by a fixed gaze at some object or other. It is of little consequence whether the object is bright or not. Later, Braid gave up placing the object so close as to cause a convergence of the eyes. It is considered advantageous to hold the object so much above the eyes that the eyelids are strained as much as possible in keeping the eyes open. Instead of a lifeless object, such as was used in the first experiment mentioned above, the experimenter

can make use of his finger for the purpose, or, as the professional magnetizers prefer to do, of his eye (Du Potet). Lately, Luys has used a rapidly revolving mirror, in order to produce speedy and extreme fatigue of the eye. Just the same effect can be produced by hearing as by sight; for this the ticking of a watch is preferred (Weinhold, Heidenhain). Among uncivilized races particular instruments are used to produce analogous states; for example, the sound of a magic drum among the Lapps; among other races the monotony of uniform rhythm in song (Bastian). Instead of these continuous, monotonous, weak stimulations of the senses, we see also sudden and violent ones made use of, for example, in the Salpêtrière, the field of Charcot's work, the loud noise of a gong or a sudden ray of the Drummond light. However, it is more than doubtful whether these sudden strong physical stimuli, without any mental element, can induce true hypnosis. Perhaps we have to do here with states not far removed from paralysis from fright; at least subjects thus hypnotized often wear an expression of fear (Richer). The effect can be also produced through the sense of touch, even by a gentle stroking of the skin, or by pressure upon it. Some have also sought to induce hypnosis by the stimulus of heat—*e.g.*, warm plates of metal (Berger). It is known that warmth easily brings on natural sleep, while cold, if it is not too great, keeps it off.

I here mention in particular the so-called mesmeric, mesmerizing, or magnetic passes, upon which Richet sets great value. I have already shown and described above, in the second experiment, how they are made; I mention them here, though the question of how they act is not yet satisfactorily settled. It is not certain whether the stimulation of temperature, as Heidenhain

and Berger suppose, or the slight motion of the air, or the mental influence, is the efficient agent in this case. I myself consider it most likely that the various agencies combine, but that the mental factor is the most important. It is not necessary to assume the existence of any peculiar force, such as the magnetic fluid of the mesmerist. An old hypothesis has been recently revived, namely, that we have to do with an electrical action (Rostan, J. Wagner). Tarchanoff has shown that by means of gentle stimulations of the skin weak electric currents can be produced in it, but that these same can also be produced by strong concentration of the will, in consequence of which there is always muscular contraction. Now, as the mesmerists consider a strong effort of will necessary on the part of the operator, it is possible that a peripheral development of electricity takes place in him, which has an effect upon the mesmerized subject. This idea is, however, merely a supposition of individual investigators; we know nothing certain about it yet.

We should note that the method of so-called "mesmeric passes" was not used by Mesmer; it is true that he endeavoured to influence by touch, but these peculiar monotonous long-continued passes which I have described above, were unknown to him.

Pitres maintains that certain portions of the body are particularly sensitive to stimulation of the skin. The "*zones hypnogènes*" described by him sometimes exist on only one side of the body, and sometimes on both. Stimuli applied to them are said to produce hypnosis in certain persons, as is indeed maintained of other parts. Among these parts of the body the crown of the head, the root of the nose, the thumb, the elbow, &c., are particularly named. Accord-

ing to Chambard and Laborde a gentle scratching of the skin of the neck induces hypnosis. I myself have seen many persons who maintained that they became hypnotized only when I touched their foreheads. It is often stated that touches on the forehead induce a sleepy state in many persons (Purkinje, Spitta). An Englishman named Catlow magnetized by means of gentle stroking of the forehead (Bäumler). I also know some persons who, in order to go to sleep more easily, cause other parts of the body to be gently stimulated—the head, or soles of the feet, for example. Eulenburg maintains that pressure on the cervical vertebræ induces hypnosis.

Finally, I mention the action of the electric battery, whose influence, according to Weinhold, has the same effect as mesmeric passes. Weinhold, however, writing in a critical spirit, does not consider that mental influences are in this case excluded. When Eulenburg obtained a lethargic condition, resembling hypnosis, by galvanizing the head, this experiment did not prove a true hypnosis, since the person experimented upon had already had attacks of lethargy. It is certain that in many cases where hypnosis is supposed to have been caused by the application of electricity to the head, the hypnosis has only come on because the subject believed that electricity induced hypnosis. Hirt often uses electricity in this way, but is at the same time perfectly clear that it is not the electricity but the subject's belief in its effect, that produces the hypnosis.

To conclude, I further mention stimulations of the muscular sense, such as the cradle rocking used to send little children to sleep; I leave on one side the question as to whether hypnosis can be attained by this means. Similar states are said to be produced among

uncivilized peoples by violent whirling or dancing movements; the movements are, however, accompanied by music and other mental excitations. The best known are the Aïssaouas, in Algiers (Figuier, Bert, Delphin). "They carry on their business chiefly in the Algerian town of Constantine. They are able by means of dancing and singing to throw themselves into a state of ecstasy difficult to describe, in which their bodies seem to be insensible even to severe wounds. They run pointed iron and sharp knives into their heads, eyes, necks, and breasts, without injuring themselves" (Hellwald). The same thing is related of the Buddhist convents in Tibet (Hellwald, Gabriel Huc), and Dr. Sperling has told me that he has himself seen dervishes in Constantinople, who, from the expression of their eyes and their whole appearance, as well as from the peculiar postures they maintained for a length of time, impressed him as being in a hypnotic state. The state may have been induced by monotonous singing and uniform whirling movements. As Dr. Sperling has a particularly wide experience in the field of hypnotism and is one of the most competent authorities on the subject, his opinion is of peculiar value.

I have hitherto spoken only of sense-stimuli among the physical methods. But it must also be mentioned that the absence of these stimuli is likewise specified as an expedient for hypnosigenesis. Jendrássik, of Buda-Pesth, expresses the opinion that fixed attention is only effective because it causes fatigue of the nerves of sight, and consequently produces insensibility to stimulation. Perhaps the case related by Strümpell is of this class; he observed a person who fell asleep immediately on the cessation of sense-stimulation.

This classification of hypnogenetic expedients is merely theoretical (Forel, Levillain); and that for two reasons. In the first place we cannot regard body and mind as two factors which are independent of one another. Sense-stimuli, which affect the body, nearly always exercise a certain effect on the mind; the mind, on the other hand, can act upon nothing which has not previously entered it by means of the organs of sense. In the second place, in practice several hypnogenetic processes are habitually used at the same time. This will become perfectly clear if the hypnotized person is watched: let him be told that he must keep any particular idea well in mind, that he must concentrate his whole attention on the idea of sleep; he will then, in order to obey the command, look steadily at some point, or at once shut his eyes, in order as much as possible to prevent distraction of thought.

Thus Bernheim occasionally uses fixed attention at the same time as the mental methods. Braid, again, who made use of fixation almost entirely, yet considered a particular mental activity also necessary. This is particularly to be noticed, because some people nowadays believe that they are using the method of Braid when they tell the subject to look steadily at something. In reality Braid considered a steady attention as well as a steady gaze indispensable if hypnosis were to be attained; the subject must think steadily of the thing he was looking at, and must not allow himself to be diverted from it. According to Braid, one can hypnotize even in the dark.

But even theoretically we cannot always keep these things apart. Closing of the eyes, with slight pressure upon them, often leads, as Lasègue showed,

to hypnotic states. How these come about, whether through the cessation of the sense stimulation, or through the idea of sleep, which the closing of the eyes certainly easily calls up, cannot be decided. After these details, the much discussed and disputed question must be answered, whether a person can be hypnotized without his knowledge; whether any one can be thrown into the hypnotic state merely by sense-stimuli, without these arousing an image of the hypnosis. I know of no well-authenticated case in which sense stimulation has produced hypnosis by a purely physiological action. Most people upon whom such experiments are made know that an attempt is being made to hypnotize them; they have been already hypnotized, and the stimuli arouse conscious or unconscious mental images of the hypnosis; or they have seen the same experiments with others, or have heard of them. Even when this is not the case, the objection of Bernheim and Forel remains to be considered, that the stimuli induce a feeling of fatigue, and through this induce the hypnosis.

Which of the above methods, or which combination of them is the best for practical use, is a question the answer to which is not so simple that every one who has made a dozen experiments is justified in trying to reply to it. When we find that Richet thinks he can throw nearly anybody into the hypnotic state by means of mesmeric passes, that Liébeault hypnotizes nearly all his patients by means of the Nancy process, that Braid hypnotized ten persons out of fourteen by means of fixed attention, we see that different methods bring about nearly identical results. I am decidedly of opinion that in each individual case that method should be selected by means of which

the most vivid picture of the hypnosis, and the conviction that it will come on, can be produced in the subject. I lay stress on the fact that in individual cases persons appear refractory to one method while another succeeds. I have found persons insusceptible to the use of fixed attention, or to the method of Nancy, while I obtained results by mesmeric passes. Evidently this proves nothing against mental action, as many persons believe they can only be influenced by some particular process. On the other side I have seen that intense fixity of gaze sometimes induces hypnosis when other methods are useless, perhaps because the subjective expectation of the hypnosis is sooner aroused by the long, intense stare, than by verbal orders. Again, in some cases it is well to attain the aim quickly, by means of a sharp shock (Sperling, Forel, Van Eeden, Van Renterghem).

I should here mention that, according to Landouzy, Proust, Ballet, and Benedikt, the magnet also has a hypnotizing effect, although my own numerous experiments have been unsuccessful. That the bending back of the head can induce hypnosis, as Eulenburg says it does, must surely be founded on a mistake.

Chambard puts chloroform, ether, &c., among the hypnogenetic agents. In any case, many phenomena analogous to those of hypnosis have been observed in the sleep induced by these agents (Spring, Rifat, Herrero, Roth). I consider it better to distinguish these agents from hypnosis (F. Myers).

The waking from hypnosis (dehypnotization) can also occur in two ways—through immediate action on the imagination, or through sense stimulation, exactly as waking out of the natural sleep occurs sometimes from mental causes, for example, from habit, or from the resolution to awake at a certain hour; and sometimes from stronger stimuli of the senses, for

example, a loud noise. It is nearly always possible to put an end to the hypnosis by mental means, that is, by the command to wake up, or to wake up at a particular signal. It is hardly ever necessary to use other means, such as fanning, excitation by the faradism, sprinkling with water, loud calls, &c. I cannot confirm the statement of some, that cold has an arousing effect. Just as the mesmerizing passes induce hypnosis, so the demesmerizing passes—as I used them in the second experiment, above described—cause it to disappear. Whether the cool current of air, which is nearly always thereby generated, causes the awakening, or whether it is, as I think more probable, the belief of the subject that he must wake, remains undecided. Pitres and others think that there are parts of the body where stimulation produces awakening; they are called "*zones hypno-férnatrices.*" Among them the ovarian regions are particularly notable. Finally, I mention the forcible opening of the eyes as a means of ending the hypnosis. Other processes which have been given, and which were supposed to induce awakening by physical means, such as bringing a coal near the patient, have only a mental effect, as they are understood as a command to awake. In rare cases these artificial means of awakening do not succeed quickly; a feeling of fatigue then continues. We feel the same thing occasionally when we wake out of natural sleep. After deep and long hypnosis a temporary state like extreme sleepiness follows, in which certain hypnotic phenomena continue.

If the awakening is not brought about by artificial means, persons in a light hypnotic state, such as is described in the first two experiments, habitually wake of their own accord after a few minutes or even

seconds; this especially happens when the continuance of the state has not been expressly ordered. Some people wake at the exact moment when the experimenter leaves them, as they then no longer think themselves under his influence. Others awake of their own accord out of deep hypnosis if they hear an unexpected and loud noise, or have exciting dreams. Thus, I once saw a grown-up person wake herself by screaming, because in the hypnotic state she had believed herself to be a little child, and in that character had begun to cry. The awakening which comes about without any apparent cause is remarkable and unexplained (*mouvement psychique.*) The same thing is sometimes observed in natural sleep, especially at its beginning; O. Rosenbach traces it to increase of the reflexes. Generally, however, the deep hypnoses continue for some time when they are not artificially terminated. Sometimes many hours pass before the subject wakes.

The old mesmerists (Du Potet, Lafontaine) describe as a rare occurrence in hypnotic experiments a state of lethargy, in which artificial awakening was impossible. After some time there was a spontaneous awakening, and no evil consequences were to be observed. Guermonprez described lately how a person had remained three days in hypnosis, nobody being able to wake him. It appears that these incidents occur more often when sense stimulations are used—for example, the fixed gaze or the mesmeric passes. And again, this state has only been observed among hysterical subjects, so far as I am aware. Therefore I believe that this lethargy must be distinguished from hypnosis, the chief symptoms of which are wanting. We cannot identify this state with hypnosis, merely because it is a result of the same

processes; the identity could only be proved by a likeness of symptoms, not by a likeness in the manner of their production. When one person receives a blow on the ear and hæmorrhage under the skin follows, while another receives a like blow, and has the drum of the ear burst: these are two different injuries, and the fact that they have the same cause does not make them identical.

Who is hypnotizable? In order to settle this question without hypnotic experiments, Ochorowicz has invented a special instrument—the hypnoscope: it is an iron magnet in the form of a ring, which the person to be tested puts on his finger. Hypnotizable persons are supposed to experience certain sensations in the skin and twitchings of the muscles, while with the insusceptible nothing of the kind takes place. The researches of other investigators have not confirmed this (Obersteiner, Gessmann, Grasset, Bottey). Other signs which are supposed to indicate susceptibility to hypnotism I consider untrustworthy.

Neither neurasthenia nor pallor, neither hysteria nor general feebleness of health, produce a disposition to hypnosis. As far as hysteria is concerned, it is not in my experience peculiarly suited to hypnotism. Our ordinary hysteria with its variable characteristics of headache and the feeling of a lump in the throat (globus) combined with the general hysterical desire to be interesting and to exaggerate the sufferings endured, produces, according to my experience, very little disposition to hypnosis. The spirit of contradiction, very strongly developed in such patients, contributes not a little to this. The mistaken notion that hysterical or nervous patients are particularly susceptible to hypnotism results from the fact that most physicians have experimented with them only;

besides which it is very easy to discover in all persons something which may be explained as a hysterical symptom, if only we try to do so. If, however, we consider every one who submits himself to a hypnotic experiment to be "nervous" (Morand), then, naturally, only nervous persons can be put into the hypnotic state; but this view cannot be taken seriously. In reality, if we are to take a pathological condition of the organism as a necessary condition for hypnosis, we shall be obliged to conclude that nearly everybody is not quite right in the head. For the rest, the old mesmerists in part (Wirth and others) maintained that hysteria only produced a disposition to the magnetic sleep.

Further, if general weakness is to be put forward as a predisposing factor, I, for my part, must emphasize the fact that I have hypnotized many very muscular persons. It is known that Hansen, whose practical experience is of some value, always preferred muscular people for his experiments. The susceptibility of tuberculous patients is striking (Bernheim.)

With regard to mental aptitudes, Forel believes that every mentally healthy human being is hypnotizable. In Liébeault's opinion heredity plays a great part in the disposition to hypnosis. It is universally agreed that the mentally unsound, particularly idiots, even if not wholly insusceptible, are still very much more difficult to hypnotize than the healthy. However, A. Voisin informs us that he has succeeded in hypnotizing ten per cent. of the mentally unsound, by exercising the necessary patience. With regard to intelligence, intelligent persons are more easily hypnotizable than the dull and stupid. Among the lower classes the mentally superior are undoubtedly easier to hypnotize than others. Mental excitement

easily prevents hypnosis. The numerous observations made by Wetterstrand, Ringier, and others, that certain individuals are occasionally refractory to hypnosis, may be connected with this fact. I could confirm this occasional disinclination to hypnosis by a whole series of cases. I consider it a complete mistake to say that the disposition to hypnosis is a sign of weakness of will. Without doubt the ability to maintain a passive state has a predisposing effect. This is why soldiers are in general easy to hypnotize. The ability to direct one's thoughts in any particular direction is also very favourable. As we habitually consider this power to be a sign of strength of will, the disposition to hypnosis would rather be a sign of strength than of weakness of will. This ability to give the thoughts a certain prescribed direction is partly natural capacity, partly a matter of habit, and often an affair of will. Those, on the contrary, who can by no possibility fix their attention, who suffer from continual absence of mind, can hardly be hypnotized at all. It is specially among the nervous that a strikingly large number of this last class are to be found, who cannot hold fast to a thought, and in whom a perpetual wandering of the mind predominates. The disposition to hypnosis is also not specially common among those persons who are otherwise very impressible. It is well known that there are some who can be easily influenced in life, who believe all that they are told, upon whom the most unimportant trifles make an impression, nevertheless, when an effort is made to hypnotize them, they offer a lively resistance, and the typical symptoms of hypnosis cannot be induced in them.

Nationality (Ewald), or local surroundings (Brugia),

have no influence upon susceptibility to hypnotism. Forel in Zürich, Renterghem in Amsterdam, and Wetterstrand in Stockholm, have shown that Teutonic peoples are as easy to hypnotize as Latin. Wetterstrand only failed to hypnotize eighteen people out of 718 in Stockholm. Besides, Braid's experiences in England show nearly the same thing. Recently it has been pointed out in many quarters that Russians are more easily hypnotized than any other people (Poirault and Drzewiecki). In any case it may be considered settled that susceptibility to hypnotism is no peculiar privilege of the Latin races. With regard to age, children under three years cannot be hypnotized at all, and even up to about eight years of age they can only be hypnotized with difficulty. Although children are otherwise easily influenced, their thoughts are so easily distracted that they cannot fix their minds on a prescribed picture, such as that of hypnosis. Old age is by no means refractory to hypnosis. According to the experiences of the school of Nancy, with which mine agree, older persons more often remember, after hypnosis, all that has happened than do younger ones. Sex has no particular influence; it is a mistake to suppose that women are better adapted than men.

Besides this, individual observers (Brémaud, Maack) mention some points which are supposed to be favourable or unfavourable. Brémaud, for example, mentions alcohol as favourable, Maack as unfavourable. But universal conclusions should not be drawn from a few observations, as so doing will not contribute to any clear understanding. For the same reason I question the general accuracy of some of Ringier's statements, though the rest of his remarks have a great practical value. According to him, hypnotism is less easily practised in winter than in summer, because cold is supposed

to be unfavourable ; thus persons who were easily hypnotized in summer become refractory in winter.

The frequency with which an attempt should be repeated on the same person is of more importance. While, according to Hähnle, only one person in ten proves susceptible on a first attempt, the proportion increases enormously with the frequency of the sittings. This is not to be wondered at, from the mental excitement shown by many people in the beginning. And as it is most important to hypnosis that the attention should not be distracted, many people are first of all obliged to learn to concentrate their thoughts. There are even experimenters who maintain that everybody is hypnotizable, if only the attempt is continued long enough. Without declaring this view to be false, I may remark that I have made forty or more attempts with some persons without obtaining hypnosis. Perhaps by even longer continued efforts a result would have been attained, as indeed has happened to me many times after forty vain attempts. It may be something the same thing as with the great lottery prize. According to probability everybody would win once, if they could only live and play long enough.

Besides these subjective conditions there are some other objective ones. Thus, for example, disturbing noises at the first experiment have power to prevent the hypnosis ; they draw off the attention, and thus interfere with the mental state necessary for hypnosis. Later, when the subject has learnt to concentrate his thoughts, noises are less disturbing. But in hypnotic experiments the most absolute avoidance by those present of any sign of mistrust is necessary. The least word, a gesture, may thwart the attempt to hypnotize. As the mood of a large company is often

distrustful, as a whole generation also is sometimes sceptical, the great variations in susceptibility to hypnosis which have shown themselves at different times and places are explicable. It is not surprising that on one occasion ten persons, one after the other, are hypnotized, while on another occasion ten other persons all prove refractory.

Experience and a knowledge of the mental conditions of mankind are indispensable for the hypnotizer. The first is absolutely necessary; it is more important than a knowledge of anatomy and physiology. By experience one learns to discriminate and to enter into the particular character of the subject. Practice and a gift for observation enable the right stress to be laid at the right moment either on fixed attention or on the closing of the eyes. The experienced experimenter knows how to judge whether it is best in any particular case to attain his aim by speaking or whether, as sometimes happens, speech would be a hindrance, and the chief stress would be best laid on fixed attention, &c. A person who is easily hypnotized can be hypnotized by any one; but one who is hypnotized with difficulty can only be thrown into hypnosis by a good and experienced experimenter. It is by no means a contradiction of this that the personal impression made by the experimenter may be very important and have great influence. In consequence of this it happens that a certain person A. can be hypnotized by B., while he remains refractory to the efforts of C. On the other hand, it may happen that D. can be hypnotized by C. but not by B. This shows that the influence of one person over another is dependent on the individuality of both. We find the same in life, in the relation of teacher to pupil, and of pupil

to teacher, in the reciprocal relations of friends, or lovers. The influence of one person on another always depends on the individuality of both.

That there exists an individual aptitude for hypnotization, and for making the suggestions which will be discussed later, is certain. It is true that we must not think of this ability as did the older mesmerists, who supposed that certain persons exercised a peculiar physical force upon others; we must represent this natural ability to ourselves as we do many others, when we have to do with particular mental aptitudes. Calm, presence of mind, and patience are essential, and not every one can exercise these qualities. To busy oneself with hypnotizing a subject daily for hours at a time demands a perseverance which everybody does not possess. Very much more patience is necessary for this than for writing prescriptions, for example, several hundreds of which could be produced in the same length of time.

The question whether hypnosis can be induced against the wish of the subject is by no means unimportant. We must distinguish here whether the subject complies with the prescribed conditions or whether he does not. If he does; if, for example, he sufficiently concentrates his attention; if he gazes at some object with the necessary attention, then hypnosis may be produced at the first attempt, even against the wish of the person experimented on. However, it must be remembered that a person who does not intend to allow himself to be hypnotized will hardly place himself in the necessary mental state. He will not generally fulfil the conditions; he will fix his eyes, but will allow his attention to wander. However, I think I may assert that certain

persons accustomed to obedience can be hypnotized at the first attempt even against their will, and without the ordinary necessary straining of the attention, if only they are told that hypnosis will occur. Notwithstanding, these cases appear to be rare. It is not to be doubted that many people who have been frequently hypnotized can be re-hypnotized against their will and without their intentional compliance with the ordinary conditions. The experiments of Heidenhain show that people can be hypnotized against their wish. He hypnotized soldiers in the presence of their officers, who had strictly forbidden them to sleep. Such a command would have as much effect on a soldier as the personal wish not to sleep. Post-hypnotic suggestion, of which I shall speak later, is also a means of sending persons to sleep against their wish. There is a third possibility, namely, that no wish should exist in either direction. The conditions necessary for hypnosis may occur occasionally by chance, without the subject being conscious of them (Max Dessoir). For example, some one over his work is obliged to look fixedly at a certain point; this suffices to induce hypnosis (sometimes after earlier unfit experiments), without the person thinking of it. In this case the will is neither interested for it nor against it. The statement of Preyer, that persons being photographed sometimes remain sitting rigidly still after the taking of the photograph is finished, may be referred to a hitherto unsuspected hypnotic state, brought on by the fixed stare necessary to the process. It is known that some of the inmates of the Salpêtrière in Paris fall suddenly into catalepsy in consequence of some loud unexpected noise. There is an interesting case of a girl who had often

been hypnotized by loud noises, and who went to a drawer to appropriate some photographs out of it. The casual beating of a gong threw her into a cataleptic state, so that she stood motionless in the act of carrying out her theft, and was discovered. Hack Tuke remarks that it is a pity all thieves cannot be taken as easily.

As Bertrand related, with certain persons natural sleep can be transformed into magnetic sleep. Many attempts have been made to do this in later times. Baillif, Gscheidlen, Berger, Bernheim, and Forel have even made these experiments on persons who had never been hypnotized at all, or who had previously been refractory to hypnotism. I myself have only been able to make one observation of this kind. The person concerned was a gentleman whom I had already frequently hypnotized, and whom I often threw into the hypnotic state while he was taking his afternoon sleep, without waking him. It is doubtful whether such experiments would succeed with persons who had never heard of hypnotism.

Still more to be doubted appear the assertions of Pitres, who thinks it possible to produce a hypnotic state in this way by means of stimulating the "*zones hypnogènes.*" Coste likewise asserts that sleep produced by chloroform and morphia can be transformed into a hypnotic sleep. Herrero has lately said that even any state of insensibility produced by chloroform, which has reached a certain stage, can be transformed into hypnosis, and that by this means persons apparently refractory to hypnosis may be hypnotized. My experiments in this direction up to the present time have had negative results.

In any case, however, previous consent is not absolutely necessary to the production of hypnosis,

and, on the other hand, there are people who are refractory in spite of a decided wish to be hypnotized (Preyer, Forel). In general, however, the intentional resistance of the subject hinders hypnosis, simply because a person who is willing to be hypnotized complies more easily with the necessary conditions than another. Consequently it is not astonishing that patients who come to a doctor on purpose to be hypnotized, particularly when they come with full confidence, are more easy to hypnotize than others. These others often allow an attempt to be made with them, with the silent resolution to show that "they are not to be caught," or they submit themselves, as Nonne says, "only for fun," and yet many believe that susceptibility to hypnosis is a sign of defective will or intelligence!

As so many different circumstances influence the induction of hypnosis, it is not surprising that the proportion of hypnotizable persons should be differently stated. If Ewald in the Women's Hospital at Berlin can only hypnotize two persons, while Liébeault hypnotizes 92 per cent. of his patients, the reason of this enormous difference must lie in the different nature of the conditions. The insufficient mental preparation of Ewald's subjects is particularly to blame for his failure. Bottey gives 30 per cent. as susceptible, Morselli 70 per cent., Delbœuf over 80 per cent. His results appear to me of great value, having been evidently collected with critical care, as must be acknowledged by every unprejudiced person who reads Delbœuf's works. He excludes simulators with the greatest care, and is, perhaps, in this respect more sceptical than the investigators at Nancy. Bernheim refuses the right to judge of hypnotism to all hospital doctors who cannot

hypnotize at least 80 per cent. of their patients ; Forel fully agrees with him.

The oftener hypnotic experiments are made the sooner hypnosis generally is induced. The first attempt often takes five minutes or more, although on many occasions a few seconds suffice. When the experiment has succeeded a few times, a few moments are nearly always enough to attain the result. This is because the remembrance of the earlier hypnosis essentially favours its return. Besides this, the strongest hindrance has been overcome by the earlier hypnosis—which is the belief of the subject that he is not hypnotizable, or that he can only be hypnotized by certain persons ; this belief often prevents hypnosis. The certainty with which well-known hypnotizers hypnotize people, rests partly on the fact that these subjects believe they can be hypnotized by one celebrated hypnotizer and not by another. The disposition to hypnosis may also disappear when the experiments have been discontinued for a long time. Thus I once saw a gentleman who was susceptible in a high degree become refractory again, after no experiments had been made with him during six months. I have observed the same thing in several people, but the disposition to hypnosis can generally be reproduced after a short time, if a few attempts are made.

From the above examples it appears that the various hypnotic states differ much from one another, and that the depth of the hypnosis varies extraordinarily. This suggested that in order to obtain a general survey an attempt at classification must be made. The best known classification is that of Charcot, who supposes three stages—the cataleptic, lethargic, and somnambulic. I shall go into more

detail as to these later, but will remark here that this classification has no universal value; Charcot himself does not maintain that it has. In my own opinion the classification made by Gurney, containing two stages —alert and deep—is only accurate for a few cases. In the same way the three stages supposed by Richer, Fontan, and Ségard, are not sufficiently well marked for practical use. Nor does the classification of Delbœuf seem to me entirely admissible. According to him there are two stages of hypnosis—a stage in which pain can be felt, and a stage in which it cannot (analgesia). As, however, complete insensibility to pain is very rare, and as the transitions are vague, insensibility to pain does not appear to me to be a suitable distinguishing characteristic. The classifications made by Liébeault, Bernheim, and Forel, have also become well known. As they agree in the main, only differing in the number of stages—according to Liébeault, 6; according to Bernheim, 5; according to Forel, 3, I shall only cite that of Forel:—

Stage 1. Drowsiness: the subject can resist suggestions only with great effort.

Stage 2. Hypotaxy ("*charme*"): the eyes are fast closed and cannot be opened; the subject is obliged to obey various suggestions.

Stage 3. Somnambulism: it is characterized by loss of memory on waking—that is, the subject remembers nothing after waking that has passed during the hypnosis.

The classifications of Forel, Liébeault, and Bernheim, rest chiefly on loss of memory, as a particular group (Forel's 3rd stage) of hypnotic states with loss or memory is placed in contrast with the others (Forel's 1st and 2nd stages), in which no loss of memory exists.

Those hypnotic states in which loss of memory exists, are called somnambulism by the authors above named. Wienholt also has already said that the magnetic states with ensuing loss of memory may be called somnambulism.

I think, however, it would be better not to make our estimate of the stages of hypnosis dependent on loss of memory, but on the phenomena which appear during the hypnosis itself. I shall show that memory after hypnosis is dependent on many other factors which have nothing to do with the depth of the hypnosis. A chance view of an external object will suffice to arouse a whole chain of mental images ; we shall see that memory is influenced by suggestion.

I should prefer on this account to judge of the depth of the hypnosis only from the phenomena of the hypnosis itself. Delbœuf, who often experimented with profound hypnoses, declares that the subjects after the awakening were nevertheless perfectly aware of all the hypnotic incidents.

The numerous sub-divisions given by Liébeault and Bernheim are not easy to utilize, because there exists no principle for such classification (Max Dessoir). For example, one stage is distinguished by the complete closing of the eyes, and a deeper stage by motor disturbances in the arms. As these last, however, can occur also when the eyes are open, they cannot be regarded as a sign of the deepening of the stage in which the eyes are closed ; for in the deepening all the phenomena of previous and lighter stages must also appear.

In order to avoid these difficulties, Max Dessoir has lately published a classification of the hypnotic states as simple as it is comprehensive and clear. According to this the states fall into two large groups, which are divided from each other by the

extent of the functional disturbances. I will provisionally accept this classification. In the first group merely the voluntary movements show changes; in the second group abnormalities in the functions of the sense organs are added. In the first group, also, only those functions are abnormal which we attribute to the centrifugal nerves, while in the second group the functions of the centripetal nerves are likewise disturbed. The principle of this classification was already known to Kluge also. The minority of subjects belong to Group II.; if we take 75 per cent. to be susceptible, then about 55 per cent. belong to Group I., and 20 per cent. to Group II. According to Kron this latter percentage is perhaps too high; in his opinion a relatively smaller number of persons than I give belong to Group II. He conjectures that through practice and other factors these figures might vary considerably. It will be understood that in these two groups many stages and types can be distinguished. For example, we see that many a hypnotic state belonging to Group I. is merely characterized by the closing of the eyes, which the subject cannot voluntarily open, as in the first experiment (p. 21). As has been mentioned, this state used to be considered as a particular stage of hypnosis, but according to the explanation given above it takes its place as merely a particular form of Group I. It was generally represented as a particular stage, because in many cases hypnosis is ushered in by a closing of the eyes, while other muscles are only affected later on. However, this is really a pure accident (Max Dessoir); we have accustomed ourselves more and more to induce hypnosis by affecting the eyes, and to provoke a closing of them as quickly as possible; but this is nothing but a habit, resulting from the identification of hypnosis with sleep. There are a large number of

hypnotists who induce hypnosis when the eyes are wide open, as is the case in "fascination," which will be discussed later (*cf.* third experiment). I myself have met many people in whom it was impossible to bring about change of movement of the eye, while the other muscles were easily affected. For this reason I think the assertion of Michael that hypnosis can only be proved when the eyes are completely closed is mistaken. He is perfectly right, however, when he says that we should not ascribe to hypnosis the states of fatigue and giddiness which ensue after long attention, unless other phenomena typical of hypnosis also appear.

It is clear that the two groups cannot be sharply divided from one another. On the contrary, gradual transitions are everywhere to be found. Also the transition from a normal state to hypnosis is gradual, and certainly not so sudden as some think. We find many stages even before we arrive at the closing of the eyes, which certainly does not indicate a deep hypnosis; at first only heaviness of the eyelids, then the desire to close the eyes, then a difficulty in opening them, and finally a complete closing of them. All possible stages are displayed, and it would not be very difficult to describe a hundred different ones. Further, a deep hypnosis is not always attained at once; the light states are often passed through before the deepest appears. It is naturally difficult, through all these gradual transitions, to decide the exact moment of the appearance of hypnosis. A deep sigh, which is often heard at the beginning of hypnosis, is by many wrongly considered as diagnostic of the important moment, particularly as this symptom is easily spread by imitation (Delbœuf). The movements of swallowing which appear, especially after long fixation, have equally little significance.

CHAPTER III.

THE SYMPTOMS OF HYPNOSIS.

I COME now to the point which is most important and which requires the fullest consideration. In order to present as complete a survey as possible, I must make an arrangement under headings of Physiology and Psychology. It must not be thought, however, that we have to do with a real division; of that there can be no question. For the bodily functions, of which I shall speak under the head of Physiology, show a deviation from the normal purely as a consequence of psychical states. Just as a man paralyzed by fright cannot move in consequence of a mental shock, and not in consequence of an injury to the muscles, so people in a state of religious excitement have visions, not because their eyes are abnormal in visual function, but because they are in an abnormal mental state; thus in hypnosis the muscles, the organs of sense, &c., are abnormal in function only because the mental state is altered. Only from this point of view is the division made in what follows. It is doubtful whether there exist generally in hypnosis, besides the primary mental and secondary physical alterations, any primary bodily abnormalities. Descriptions have often been given of them, of which I shall speak later; many such investigations, however, suffer from the fact that it is not

clear whether we are dealing with an effect of the methods employed to induce hypnosis or with one of its essential phenomena. In order to explain what is meant by this I will suppose that a person looks for a long time fixedly at a button. This will produce watering of the eyes; but this comes on in any case, whether hypnosis is produced or not. Consequently the watering of the eyes is not an essential phenomenon of hypnosis, but purely a consequence of the means employed to engender it. In consequence of the close tie which everywhere exists between the mental and bodily phenomena it will not be surprising if in discussing the latter I am often obliged to refer to the former, and *vice versâ;* a thorough separation is not possible. In order not to destroy the inner unity for merely external considerations, I shall occasionally deviate from the purely tabular arrangement.

One peculiar quality of consciousness we shall very often find in hypnosis: what is called suggestibility, or, better, increased suggestibility. I shall so often use this word, and words connected with it, that it will be well to define exactly what is meant by it. For this purpose I must make a little digression

Every concept in human beings has a particular action, which is to be recognized by an external or internal effect. For example, by the laws of association one concept calls up another. The idea of St. Helena awakes that of Napoleon I. This peculiar arousing of ideas by other ideas was called the law of suggestion by a great school of Scotch psychologists (Thomas Brown and others), and Paul Janet thinks that this expression induced Braid to introduce the term "to suggest" for an analogous phenomenon—the *suggestion d'attitude*—which will be discussed further

on. A concept can, however, produce an effect by arousing feeling; if any one thinks of a dead relative, he feels grief, and the thought of a joyful event awakens a feeling of happiness. Inclinations are called up in the same way; the thought of an object for which one has a great longing awakens the desire to possess it. Sensations can be also produced in the same manner. We have an example in the itching which many persons feel directly fleas are talked of. These ideas, feelings, sensations, and desires, aroused by another idea, form internal processes, which we recognize by internal experience. But an idea can have an effect which displays itself externally—for example, thoughts call up certain movements.

Let us here consider a proceeding which is called thought-reading, which, as the "willing game," was for a long time a favourite society game in England in a somewhat modified form, and which became popular in Germany through the exhibitions of Cumberland. Most people have certainly seen it; however, I will again describe the process. A person A. is made to leave the room; among those who remain, B. is chosen to think of some object present, which A. is to find. A. comes back, takes B.'s hand and demands that he shall think steadfastly of the place of the chosen object; let us say it is the lamp. B. thinks steadfastly of it, and it is seen that A. and B. go together towards the lamp, till A., pointing to it, says, "That was the object thought of." Simple as this process—explained lately by Beard, Gley, Richet, Obersteiner, Preyer, and known fifty years ago to Chevreul—may be, it appeared enigmatical to many at first. This is the explanation: B. thinks steadily of the place of the lamp, and has at the same time slight movements of the body, and particularly of

the muscles of the arm, in the direction of the lamp. A. feels these muscular movements and follows them, he permits himself to be directed by them, and finds in this way the object thought of. B. naturally did not make the movements intentionally, consequently they were involuntary and unconscious. All the same, the movements were strong enough to show A. the way. This example shows us the following; B. had a certain idea (namely, that of the place of the lamp) in his head, and this concept called up movements. The movement of the lips which occurs when one thinks intensely of a word, is of analogous character (Stricker).

We see, then, from the foregoing that ideas aroused in us have an effect which sometimes shows itself internally as other concepts, sensations, &c., and sometimes externally as movement; in many cases, perhaps in all, there is both an internal and an external effect. What effect appears, what idea, what feeling, what movement will be induced by the first concept, depends upon the individuality of the person, upon his mental imagery, upon his character, his habits, and upon the species of concept; but a certain effect always follows.

In many cases a person (A.) is able to attain some particular effect, which he intentionally aimed at, by rousing in B. a definite concept; and this effect is often attained independently of B.'s will, or even against it. We see an example of this in a juggler. He wants to take some object or other without being seen by the public: to attain this he looks at another point—for example, at his left hand. The eyes of the spectators involuntarily follow his. By glancing at his left hand the juggler has caused the spectators to look in the same direction. He has

aroused, as quick as lightning, in the spectators the idea that something is going on at his left hand; and this idea has had the effect of making the spectators look at the left hand. A juggler is very often able to influence the spectators by some such proceeding. They are often thus induced to look in the direction desired by the juggler, in order that he may be able to change or hide some object unobserved. We see here, then, that he produces the effect he desires—namely, to make people look in another direction. But he takes great care not to tell the spectator to look in this direction. If he were to say this the spectator would discover his object, and certainly would not look at the spot which the juggler wishes, and he would not attain his end. On the other side there are also certain cases in which a desired effect is attained simply by directly assuring the person concerned that the effect will appear. He is certainly able in most cases to prevent arbitrarily the appearance of such an effect; but not always, however. An example which is brought forward by Bonniot should make this clear. One says to a person who is embarrassed, "You are getting red in the face now!" It is well known that many people really blush when the conviction that they are blushing is aroused in their minds. Now a proceeding of this nature, in which an effect is obtained simply by arousing in the person concerned a conviction of its appearance, is called a suggestion. We shall find it extremely often in hypnosis, and I have already given above a number of examples of such suggestions. The method of inducing hypnosis in use at Nancy is to be referred to this kind of process. By it an endeavour is made to create in the subject a conviction of the appearance

of hypnosis, and through this to induce the hypnosis itself.

But there are also cases in which the idea of the appearance of an effect is not aroused by a second person, but generated by the subject himself. The corresponding effect very often appears, even against the subject's will. Under pathological conditions we find this process very common: a stammerer, for example, can often speak quite well, when he does not think about his stammering; as soon as he thinks of it, and as soon as the conviction that he will not be able to speak without stammering takes possession of him, that moment he begins to stammer. Now, as the idea of stammering is here generated by the person himself, while the above-mentioned idea of blushing was generated by another person, the last process, in which an outsider induces the idea is called external suggestion, or hetero-suggestion, the first self-suggestion or auto-suggestion.

Such auto-suggestions are not very uncommon as pathological incidents. Dread of open spaces (agoraphobia) is nothing but an auto-suggestion. The patient in this case is possessed by the idea that he cannot step across some open space; no reasoning is of avail here. The patient acknowledges its justice without permitting it to influence him, because his auto-suggestion is too powerful. As a rule, logic is for the most part powerless over these auto-suggestions. Many hysterical paralyses are likewise auto-suggestions; thus a patient cannot move his legs because he is convinced that movement is impossible. If this conviction can be shaken, movement is at once practicable.

Auto-suggestion may be called up by some external cause; this may affect the person from outside, and

thus induce an auto-suggestion. Charcot refers some isolated traumatic paralyses to some such originating mechanism—though this point is still in debate. According to this view a violent blow on the arm, following on certain disturbances of sensibility, may produce in the person concerned a conviction that he cannot move his arm. As the conviction was called up by the blow, this case stands somewhere between external suggestion and auto-suggestion. We will call all cases in which the auto-suggestion did not arise spontaneously, but was the secondary result of something else, such as a blow, indirect suggestions; as opposed to direct suggestion, which arouses a certain idea immediately, of which I have already given several examples. It is, besides, not always necessary that there should be a conscious mental act in suggestion; individuality and habit sometimes replace this, and play a great part in the training of the subject, of which we have still to speak. For example, if some external sign, such as a blow on the arm, has several times, by means of a conscious mental act, produced the auto-suggestion that the arm is paralyzed, then the auto-suggestion may repeat itself later mechanically at every blow without any conscious thought about the effect of the blow.

A particular psychical state, disposing to suggestion, is a necessary condition of its appearance. The disposition to suggestion is called suggestibility; it must be present and must precede the suggestion if the latter is to succeed (Bentivegni). A person in such a state is said to be suggestible.

We shall now see that we can in this way obtain many effects during hypnosis. We shall also see that we can produce these effects not only during hypnosis (hypnotic or intra-hypnotic suggestion), but

that these extend to the time following. We call this post-hypnotic suggestion. By means of this we can tell the person in the hypnotic state that after his awakening a particular result will follow. We can also distinguish another kind of suggestion: something may be suggested to the subject before the hypnosis, which is to follow in that state. This is pre-hypnotic suggestion.

(1) *Physiology.*

We will now pass to a discussion of the functions of the individual organs. The alterations which we find in hypnosis affect the voluntary and involuntary muscles as well as the organs of sense, common sensation, the secretions, metabolism, and in rare cases also the cell power of organization.

The voluntary muscles show the most frequent abnormalities, and suggestion exercises a most extraordinary influence over their functions during hypnosis. We will ask, first of all, what is the state of the functions of the voluntary muscles during hypnosis, when no kind of external influence is exercised. There are the greatest differences, according to the method of hypnotization selected, and according to the character of the subject. Some are able to move with perfect freedom during hypnosis till the command of the experimenter inhibits some particular movement; many, on the contrary, look as if they were asleep. In this case we see no movements, or very rare ones, which are slow and laboured. When we discuss the phenomena of suggestion we shall see that this incapacity for movement cannot in rare cases be removed by the command of the hypnotist. It is to be understood that

between complete freedom of movement and the incapacity to move at all there exist all sorts of transitional stages. It is all the same which of these characters has the preponderance ; muscular activity can nearly always be influenced in a high degree by suggestion.[1] By means of it we can make the existing movements impossible, or induce previously impossible ones.

I have shown (p. 22) with my second subject how easily I can make his arm powerless to move, simply by arousing in him the conviction that the arm is powerless. In just the same way the movements of the legs, trunk, larynx, and so on, escape the subject's control. "You cannot raise your arm ; cannot put out your tongue." This suffices to make the forbidden movement impossible. In some cases the inability to move arises because the subject cannot voluntarily contract his muscles ; while in other cases a contracture of the antagonistic muscles makes every attempt at voluntary movement useless (Bleuler). In the same manner the leg will lose the power of motion at command. We have seen (p. 22) in the second experiment how the power of speech can also be taken away. And it is even possible to allow the muscles to contract for one particular purpose only. If we say to a hypnotic subject, "You can only say your name ; for the rest you are absolutely dumb," the desired effect will most surely be produced. In the same way it is possible to prevent movements of the arms for one particular purpose. Thus we can make it impossible for a person to write, though he will be able to do any other kind

[1] For the sake of brevity I shall for the future always use "suggestion" for "external suggestion" when the contrary is not expressly stated.

of work. The subject can sew, play the piano, &c., but all efforts to write are vain. The movements only become possible at the moment when the experimenter gives permission. It is remarkable that in some persons one set of muscles is easier to influence by suggestion, and in others another set. For example, we can make a person dumb by suggestion, while all the other muscles obey his will in spite of suggestion. Another, again, loses the power of moving his arms at once, while his speech remains unaffected.

In just the same way as muscular movements are prevented by suggestion, so can movements be induced by it against, or without, the will of the subject. We have seen (p. 23) how the subject in the third experiment knelt down, followed me, and so forth. I say to another person, "You are lifting your right arm to lay it on your head." This happens at once. I would insist that it must be decided whether these movements take place without, or against, the will of the subject, as in the latter case an increase of sensibility is already demonstrated. I say, "Your left arm will now rise up in the air." And the arm rises as if drawn up by a string, although the subject makes no intentional movement; but neither does it occur to him to resist. The movements without the subject's will can often be distinguished from those against it by a certain steady ease. These last are nearly always characterized by strong muscular contractions, and by trembling, which shows the intense effort not to obey the will of the hypnotist.

Just in the same way the hypnotic subject is obliged to cough, laugh, talk, jump, &c., at command. It is further possible to generate by suggestion the idea of a paralysis of one of the extremities. These

isolated paralyses have a great resemblance to the psychical paralyses arising without hypnosis, such as Russell Reynolds described in 1869, as "paralysis dependent on idea"; and Erb, later on, as "paralysis by imagination." The pupils of Charcot have tried to find objective symptoms of these paralyses that depend on suggestion. It cannot be doubted that such objective changes *may* occur through a particular association of symptoms; this hypothesis is supported by Krafft-Ebing also. We must, however, recognize that this is not the rule. According to Lober, Gilles de la Tourette, and Richer, the clinical characteristics of these paralyses are marked by the absolute loss of motor power and sensation, increase of the tendon reflexes, ankle clonus, wrist clonus, complete loss of muscular sense, *i.e.*, of the ability to control perfectly the action of the muscles, and to be certain of the position of the limbs, changed electrical excitability, and vasomotor disturbances; these last are particularly said to show themselves by a bright flush of the skin on slight stimulation. These paralyses can be produced in both the hypnotic and post-hypnotic states. Besides these atonic paralyses, in which the muscles are completely relaxed, other paralyses, in which the muscles are persistently contracted, can also be produced by suggestion.

With these subjects who are deprived of will, besides the movements described above, complicated movements, or even performances (if I may be allowed the expression), also take place by suggestion. I say to the subject, "You will spin round three times." Or again, "You must lift that thing off the table; you must go and do it; you cannot help it." The subject performs the command.

The suggestion itself is made in different ways. The main point, and all turns upon this, is that the subject should thoroughly understand what the experimenter wishes. Each of the organs of sense is a door of entrance for suggestion. The most common is naturally our habitual means of communication—speech (verbal suggestion)—by means of which we *tell* the subject what we wish. But it is very important, and much more effective than words alone, that the experimenter should accompany his words by a performance of the movement which the subject is intended to execute. Consequently professional magnetizers habitually induce movements by imitation. Heidenhain was at first by this led to the false conclusion that all these movements of hypnotics depended on imitation.

Imitation appears particularly in a hypnotic state, which certain authors (Brémaud, Morselli, Tanzi) have thoroughly studied, and which Descourtis calls fascination. I have shown (p. 23) in the third experiment a case of this kind. A professional magnetizer, Donato, has demonstrated this state completely; and Morselli and others have on this account called this form of hypnosis Donatism.

As I saw in Paris, Donato uses a particular process to bring about this state. This process aims at a primary forced contracture of all the muscles of the body, in order, by this means, to limit the voluntary movements as much as possible. In this case the eyes of the hypnotist and the subject are firmly fixed on one another. The subject finally follows every movement of the experimenter. If he goes backward, the subject follows; if he comes forward, the subject does the same. In the same way the latter imitates every movement of the experimenter,

only on the condition, however, that he knows he is intended to do so. We see here, as in the above third experiment, that fascination may be a primary form of hypnosis. But it can also be originated secondarily out of the other hypnotic states; and this is more usual. When the experimenter has hypnotized the subject in some other way, and has made him open his eyes, he can fix his own steadily on them, and thus induce the same phenomena. A variety of this fascination is to fix the eyes of the subject on some other object—for example, on the finger of the experimenter. In this case the fascinated person follows every movement made by the finger.

But imitation plays an important *rôle* in hypnosis, as well as fascination. This results from the fact that the sight of a movement arouses a much more vivid mental picture of it in the hypnotized person than does a mere command; this last is, however, a necessary condition for the success of the suggestion.

Verbal suggestion is also made easier by other gestures. In order to compel some one to kneel down, an energetic movement of the hand accompanying the verbal suggestion is very effective, as in the third experiment. With this fact is connected one of the phenomena which magnetizers are fond of exhibiting, namely, the drawing of the subject after the experimenter, who makes movements with his hand which show the subject that he is intended to approach.

The experimenter can also repel the subject in the same way. This succeeds in particular by means of movements of the hand, indicating that he is to go away. It is not at all necessary that the subject should see the movements of the experimenter; it is sufficient that he should divine them either from a

noise or a slight current of air; thus the hypnotic obeys the experimenter even when he has his back turned towards him. Upon the same phenomenon depend the attraction and repulsion of single limbs of the subject, which happen in the same way, through the hypnotic's perception of the experimenter's gestures. The experimenter can make the subject raise and drop his hand, merely by gesticulating with his own; he can also obtain many effects by a glance only. It is not necessary to look steadily in the eyes of the hypnotic, as in fascination. The operator looks at the subject's leg—it at once becomes powerless to move. The hypnotic is going away—the experimenter looks at a spot on the floor and he stands chained to the spot. These phenomena vividly recall the "evil eye," the fascinating gaze, and so on, by means of which an evil influence was supposed to be exercised.

I will mention here that not only speech but also music has a suggestive effect. If dance music is played the subject will dance, following the rhythm, and when the dance is changed to another he alters his step to correspond. The influence of music upon human beings has long been known, and is striking in hypnosis. By means of music during hypnosis all sorts of different moods and feelings can be aroused corresponding to the kind of music. Naturally, the subject must have a taste for music, otherwise it will have no influence. Mesmer long ago recognized this influence of music, and used a then newly-invented instrument, the bell-harmonica, to obtain the necessary effect.

The muscular sense, which keeps us informed of the position of our limbs, requires particular consideration as a way of entrance for suggestion. It causes the phenomenon which the school of Nancy calls "cata-

lepsy by suggestion";[1] which is also to be found in other states than hypnosis—for example, in some cases of typhus fever (Bernheim). It is very common in hypnosis, and is shown in the following example: I lift the arm of a hypnotic, hold it in the air, and then let go; the arm remains as I placed it, although I say nothing. Why does this happen? Because the subject believes he must leave his arm thus, and because this suggestion was conveyed to him by the muscular sense. Another person lets his arm fall; I raise it again, and say at the same time, "The arm keeps still;" which happens; but only because the person now knows that this is intended, while he did not understand the simple raising of the arm. Let us return to the first subject. I raise the arm again, saying, "Now the arm falls down;" which, in fact, happens; evidently only because the person believes that he is to let it fall. The legs, head, trunk, and so forth, can be put into the most different postures and maintained there in exactly the same way; the muscular sense here is the only transmitter of the suggestion. The inclination of the subject to maintain cataleptic positions is so great that Heidenhain considered the hypnotic state to be a catalepsy artificially produced. Catalepsy by suggestion has nothing whatever to do with physical alterations of the muscles.

The main point for the attainment of catalepsy is that the subject should accept the idea of the corresponding attitude. Consequently the idea must take

[1] As the most different views exist as to what "Catalepsy" means, I remark here that, for the sake of brevity, I shall so name any state in which voluntary movements disappear and the limbs remain as they are placed by the experimenter —without having regard to the length of time which elapses before the limbs move freely again, or fall from their own weight.

root before the desired result can be attained. For this purpose some means or other must be employed to allow it to operate during a certain period. Words answer the purpose as well as other signs ; many persons can only be thrown into catalepsy from suggestion when the attitude required is maintained for some time.

The mesmeric passes (p. 29), which I have mentioned as a method of hypnotizing, here deserve especial mention. These mesmeric passes can be used locally in hypnosis—for example, over an arm, in order to make it cataleptic. As far as I have been able to study these phenomena, it is unnecessary in their case to imagine any special force as an explanation. According to my view the efficiency of the mesmeric passes results from the fact that by means of them the whole attention of the subject is directed to his arm for a long time. By this means the idea has time to take root. Let any one allow his arm or leg to be mesmerized in this fashion and he will find that his whole attention is directed to this part of his body, and much more strongly directed than if the attention was concentrated on the limb in another manner. From this it follows also that contractures often only appear when the mesmeric passes have drawn the attention for some time to the part of the body concerned. The passes with contact act in exactly the same way as the passes without contact. In any case—and this is important—the effect only appears when the individual has an idea of what is intended to follow. That centrifugal passes call up contractions and centripetal ones dissipate them, is a phenomenon frequently mentioned ; but we appear to have to do here with unintentional suggestions. Besides, I have been as often able to do the same thing with centripetal passes as with centrifugal.

We thus see in what manner suggestion affects the movements. A particular attitude is adopted by the subject because the corresponding idea has been implanted in him by the operator.

Such an implanted idea has yet another particular effect in hypnosis. It has often a tendency to fix itself firmly in the mind and consequently to exercise a longer continued effect. This continuation of the effect may express itself in three ways : firstly, by the fact that a certain state of contraction is continued for a long period—there is, in fact, a contracture; secondly, by a particular long-continued movement; thirdly, by the fact that when the muscles are relaxed a contraction of them can only be obtained with difficulty or not at all. I am decidedly of opinion that these phenomena of the muscles must be distinguished from suggestion ; they certainly produce a particular function, but do not explain its long duration. Sometimes it is not even possible to counteract the effect of the first suggestion by a second.

I order a person to stretch out his right arm stiffly. The arm is stretched out, and the subject is unable to bend it of his own accord ; that is, the muscles are in a state of contracture. In most cases, directly I command the arm to be bent it can be done. But there are some cases in which the experimenter is unable to put an end to the contracture at once because the effect of the earlier idea continues. The stronger was the contraction of the muscles the more difficult it is to put an end at once to the state of contracture. A particular movement can also be continued for a long time in the same way. The so-called automatic movements (Liébeault, Bernheim), or continued movements, as Max Dessoir calls them, belong to the same category. If we turn the arms of

a hypnotic round and round each other, he has a tendency to continue the movement after the operator has ceased to compel it. This happens because the subject believes that he has been ordered to go on. In some cases he continues turning his arms passively, while on other occasions he makes the strongest possible effort to keep them still, particularly when requested to do so. This resistance is useless, however; in spite of all exertion of the will the movement is continued. A new suggestion of the experimenter, that the arms shall stop, is enough in most cases to arrest the movements. Sometimes the idea has taken root so strongly that the experimenter finds it impossible to obtain an arrest at once by a counter-command. I have often observed that a movement has continued for some time in spite of my order. The most varied movements are continued in this manner after they have once begun. I lift up an arm and bend it gently at the elbow joint; directly I let go it repeats the movement. If it is desired that the hypnotic shall walk, and he does not obey the command, let him be pulled forward a little; he will then, when left to himself, continue to walk (Heidenhain). The involuntary laughter, which I have often heard, is connected with this; it begins at command, or on a slight provocation. It can be put an end to neither by the order of the experimenter nor by the will of the hypnotic. Obersteiner, who first began the scientific study of hypnotism in Austria, has observed the automatic laugh in his own case, and has described it. We can also induce alternate movements of drawing up and stretching out in the arm or leg, and nodding or shaking of the head, &c.

In some cases the passivity of the subject is so

great that the idea of a movement will not take root at all. In this case the suggestion of the experimenter is unable to overcome the muscular relaxation. Subjects of this kind let their arms drop after they have been raised, in spite of all suggestions. Questions are not answered, or only slight movements of the lips show that they have been heard at all. Two different types of hypnosis, which are called active and passive, may be distinguished by the presence or absence of this muscular relaxation. The passive form has a greater external likeness to natural sleep, while the active might be taken for a waking state on superficial observation. Passive hypnosis is not regarded by some authors (Braid) as a form of hypnosis, but is considered to be a sleep, because the especial symptom is wanting which every investigator regards as the necessary characteristic of hypnosis, namely, catalepsy. This does not appear to me absolutely necessary in order to show hypnosis. Hypnosis often shows itself as passive at the beginning ; as soon as the eyes are closed the head drops forward, or backward, while the supporting muscles of the neck are relaxed. There are many transitional states between active and passive hypnosis, and one often passes into the other.

The motor disturbances which appear in the eye must here be particularly discussed. We have already seen that many hypnoses are characterized only by the closing of the eyes, while in many cases this is added to other symptoms. But the closing of the eyes can also be influenced by suggestion, and an order of the experimenter is enough in most cases to cause their instantaneous opening. Closing of the eyes greatly favours the appearance of other hypnotic phenomena, but is not absolutely indispensable.

There are persons who can be thrown into the deepest stage of hypnosis by a fixed gaze, without closing the eyes at all (Gurney).

It must be mentioned that Heidenhain already knew and recognized the closing of the eyes as the only symptom of hypnosis. It is so much the more astonishing that the knowledge of this light hypnotic state was afterwards completely lost. Two years ago, when I threw a person in the Women's Hospital at Berlin into this hypnotic state by means of the Nancy process, Professor Ewald, who had made earlier fruitless attempts with the same person by means of fixing the eyes, believed that the closing of the eyes was simulated. These light states were then very little known.

Although, then, as we say, closing of the eyes is not a necessary preface to hypnosis, yet the eyes are in most cases closed, and it is often impossible to permit them to open without ending the hypnosis at once. Even when the eyes open during a long hypnosis, there is in many cases a certain heaviness in the lids and a desire to close them. Much depends, however, upon the method employed; and primary fascination in particular always occurs while the eyes are wide open. The closing of the eyes is sometimes very gentle, and not spasmodic; though I have seen the muscles which close the eye contract spasmodically in a large number of cases. Braid and Heidenhain already pointed out that when the lids close, even in the deepest hypnosis, the closing is not complete. There is often a slight chink of opening, and this is not unimportant, because many experiments in clairvoyance, and also pretended reading with the pit of of the stomach, may be explained by the ability to see through this small opening. In any case the closing of the eyes is a common occurrence in hypnosis, especially when the Nancy method is used.

Everybody will remember that a heaviness of the eyelids and a feeling of fatigue about the eyes is one of the first symptoms of natural sleep.

While the eyes are closed the lids not unseldom have a vibratory, trembling movement; but this symptom is of no real importance for diagnosis, as on the one hand it is sometimes wanting and on the other hand often appears without hypnosis. We often see the eyeballs roll upwards as the eyes are closing. While in some cases this position of the eyeball is maintained, in other cases the eyeball resumes its natural position directly the eyes are closed. If this does not take place, the white sclerotic only is visible when the lids are artificially raised.

I have only been able to find the convergence of the pupils described by some observers in one case of hystero-epilepsy. Borel affirms that this convergence can occasionally be obtained by suggestion. If the eyes are open, a slight state of exophthalmos is said to be observed; however, this symptom appears only to occur when the method of fixed attention is used.

As we have seen, the voluntary muscles are entirely under the influence of external suggestion during hypnosis. A further peculiarity is, that a particular movement or state of contraction of the muscles cannot always be controlled at once; and finally, we have seen that in some cases muscular contraction can only be brought about with difficulty or not at all. *One of these two functional abnormalities of the muscles exists in all hypnotic states.* Though it is occasionally confined to an inability to open the eyes, in other hypnotic states the functions of other muscles of the body are affected. The different phases result, then, from various combinations of

the above-mentioned abnormalities, and from their different localization in the muscles. The various kinds of catalepsy arise in this manner. Bernheim distinguishes several forms of this catalepsy, according to the facility with which the cataleptic position can be changed. Sometimes this is very easily done, sometimes with more difficulty, as in tonic contracture; the *flexibilitas cerea* forms an intermediate stage. These different kinds of catalepsy are affairs of hypnotic training and suggestion (Berger). I have never clearly seen a typical *flexibilitas cerea* in hypnosis, except when the training of the subject had been directed to that point. It appears from a remark of Nonne concerning the *flexibilitas cerea*, that he has collected other experiences regarding it. On that account I would say emphatically that I mean here the typical *flexibilitas cerea*, in which the feeling of resistance is the same as if we were bending limbs of wax; this feeling of resistance must further be uniform, it must not be stronger at one moment than at another. According to my experience a *flexibilitas cerea* taken in this sense is only to be obtained in hypnosis by training. In any case all these phenomena are of a purely psychical nature.

One of the best known features in hypnosis is the rigidity of the whole body. There is sometimes a complete tonic contracture of nearly all the voluntary muscles, through which the head, neck, trunk, and legs become as stiff as a board. A well-known experiment can be carried out in this state: the head can be placed on one chair and the feet on another, and the body will not double up. A heavy weight, that of a man, for example, may even be placed upon the body without bending it. It is not astonishing, after what I have said of the effect of the

mesmeric passes, that this stiffening should be more easily induced by their means; it cannot always be induced by mere verbal suggestion. A command or sign of the experimenter generally suffices to put an end to the rigidity.

We must now ask whether any further abnormalities appear in the voluntary muscles during hypnosis. Changes which are supposed not to be of psychical nature have often been assumed. It is frequently maintained that reflex action is altered in hypnosis, that reflexes appear which do not appear in normal conditions. Heidenhain and Charcot are particularly to be mentioned among those who have expressed this view. Charcot bases his classification of the hypnotic states upon the alteration of the reflexes; so I will here briefly give the chief characteristics of his three stages.

Charcot distinguishes a *grand hypnotisme* and a *petit hypnotisme*. The last he does not describe in detail; in the first, which is found in hystero-epileptics, he distinguishes three stages:—1. The cataleptic stage, which is produced by a sudden loud noise, or results from the opening of the subject's eyes while he is in the lethargic stage; in this stage the position of the limbs is easily changed while the hypnotic's eyes are open. Every position which is given to the limbs is maintained for some time, but is also easily changed by the experimenter without resistance on the part of the subject; there is also no wax-like flexibility (*flexibilitas cerea*). No tendon reflex, no increase of muscular irritability. There is analgesia, but it is possible to exercise a certain influence over the subject through sight, hearing, and the muscular sense. 2. The lethargic stage. It can be induced primarily

by fixed attention, or secondarily out of the cataleptic stage by closing the eyes. The subject is unconscious and not accessible to external influences, and there is analgesia. The limbs are relaxed and fall by their own weight; the eyes are closed, the tendon reflexes increased. There is increased excitability of the muscles, the so-called neuro-muscular hyper-excitability. These increases are demonstrated by mechanical stimulation of the muscles, nerves, or tendons. For example, if the ulnar nerve is pressed a contraction of all the muscles which it supplies follows, so that a characteristic posture of the fingers results; if a muscle is stimulated, it alone contracts. The same thing is attained by this as by local faradization in normal states, which was shown by Duchenne. While at the extremities the contraction passes into contracture—that is, becomes permanent—a stimulation of the facial nerve only causes a simple contraction in the face, which soon ceases. The resolution of the resulting contracture is produced by exciting the antagonistic muscles; thus, for example, a contracture of the wrist is put an end to by excitation of the extensors, and the contracture of one sterno-mastoid by stimulation of the other. It is striking that, according to Charcot, the motor parts of the cerebral cortex, can be stimulated through the cranium by means of the galvanic current, so that the muscles in connection with them contract. 3. The somnambulic stage. In some persons it arises primarily by means of fixed attention; it can be induced in all by friction on the crown of the head during the lethargic or cataleptic stages. The eyes are closed or half-closed. By means of gentle stimulation of the skin the underlying muscles can be put into rigid contraction, but not, however, by stimulation of

the muscles, nerves, or tendons, as in the lethargic stage. Also the contracture does not disappear on stimulation of the antagonistic muscles as in that stage. The posture of the limbs produced by contracture in somnambulism cannot also be so easily altered as in catalepsy ; a certain resistance appears, as in *flexibilitas cerea ;* Charcot calls it the cataleptoid state. The same stimulation of the skin which induced the contractures also resolves them. In somnambulism many external influences are possible by means of suggestion, of which I will speak later in their proper connection.

With regard to these stages of Charcot, most investigators doubt if they really exist, and think that they are only an artificial product, the result of an unintentional training process. It is certainly striking that since the school of Nancy pointed this out, and since it has shown the many sources of error that should be avoided, the stages of Charcot are less and less frequently observed. Wetterstrand never found them at all among 3,589 different persons (Pauly) ; experimenters who have occasionally observed them, themselves remark that they only appear in certain persons after numerous experiments (Stembo). I have been as little able as have many others to observe the stages of Charcot in my experiments ; though even a thousand negative results would not be able to overthrow one positive result of Charcot's. I have besides often experimented on several hystero-epileptics, but have failed to observe the stages, in spite of Richer's opinion that every one who experiments on such persons will obtain the same results as the school of Charcot. However, I think it possible that in some few cases of hystero-epilepsy the stages do exist. But let us confine ourselves to these few

cases; let us give them no greater importance than does Charcot himself, who by no means insists that these three stages are always to be found. Even those authors who on the whole accept Charcot's stages agree that there are many exceptions.

Charcot himself lays the chief stress on the variations of muscular excitability in the different stages. Dumontpallier and Magnin, however, maintain that the increase of neuro-muscular excitability is by no means confined to the lethargic stage, but appears in all of them. They have likewise pointed out that there are numerous mixed states (*états mixtes*) in which the symptoms, partly of the lethargic and partly of the cataleptic stages, show themselves. Richer finds single cases in which the catalepsy is signalized by greater rigidity and disposition to contracture. Tamburini and Seppilli find a lethargy with hyperæsthesia of the ovaries. Jules Janet again has produced a fourth stage in Wit.,—one of the best-known of Charcot's subjects—which is distinguished from the three others, both physically and mentally. Besides which, many deviations from the types of the three stages are to be found in the writings of Charcot's pupils. Thus Richer describes forms of lethargy, in which the subject performs movements at command, and Gilles de la Tourette describes a lucid lethargy, in which there was no loss of consciousness. In any case the idea of the stages has become somewhat confused, as an attempt has been made to include everything possible under them. Every one looked for the stages; when he could not find them, as was usually the case, he believed himself obliged to add certain new characteristics to them.

The methods used to induce the different stages have a very doubtful value. Magnin maintains that

all the stages can be brought on by one particular stimulation—for example, by pressure on the crown of the head. Which stage appears, depends, he says, upon the duration of the stimulation. Dumontpallier and Magnin have besides asserted that the same method which induces a stage will also cause it to disappear (*l'agent qui fait défait*); for example, if catalepsy is caused by a dazzling ray of light it disappears when a new ray of light falls on the eye. Braid formerly maintained something of the same kind (Max Dessoir).

The main point, however, is that Charcot and his pupils describe specific muscular phenomena, which are supposed to appear without a psychical cause. Thus, as we have seen, contractions of the muscles are said to arise during the lethargic stage by means of pressure on the nerves; muscles are contracted by stimulation of the skin without any mental act taking place; that is, without the subject's knowing that a muscle is to contract, or which muscle it will be. Heidenhain stated exactly the same thing, except that he found no contractures from pressure on the nerves, but only from stimulation of the skin. Heidenhain also believes that these contractures occur without any participation of the consciousness, and that they are reflexes, which are set going by stimulation of the skin. According to Heidenhain's view only the underlying muscles contract through gentle stimulation; by means of stronger stimulation neighbouring ones also contract, and the consequent contracture spreads, in proportion to the strength of the stimulation. In this manner Heidenhain considers the tonic spasm or rigidity, which is seen in hypnosis, to be a reflex. Heidenhain tried to find new reflexes. By means of stimulation of certain tracts of the skin

particular movements were supposed by him to be induced ; thus stimulation of the neck produced vocal sound—as in Goltz's experiments. Born also believed he had discovered a series of new reflexes, which might be seen after stroking certain portions of the skin.

The much-discussed question, whether in the experiments of Heidenhain and Charcot we have really to do with reflexes or not, is not easy to answer, because many physiologists do not distinguish with sufficient clearness between two sorts of reflexes—the physical and the mental. In order to render this clear I must make a short digression and say something about reflex action. We understand by reflex action of the muscles that particular action which is induced by excitation of a sensory nerve, without the co-operation of the will. When, for example, an insect flies into the eye it closes ; this closing is reflex, because it is involuntary. When on another occasion the eye is voluntarily closed, this is no reflex, but a voluntary movement, so that the same movement may be performed either voluntarily or by reflex action. Let us take the following case : I touch the eye of a person (A.) ; the eye closes in consequence by reflex action, that is, without the participation of A.'s will. I bring my hand near to the eye of another person (B.) ; long before it is touched it closes, not only without, but also against, B.'s will. The closing of B.'s eye is also reflex action ; the stimulation here affects the nerves of sight. And yet there is a great difference between the closing of A.'s eye and the closing of B.'s. While in the case of A. no mental action is necessary to produce the reflex, in the case of B. it is otherwise. He shuts his eye because he imagines that it will be touched—at least, this is the

general opinion. If B. puts his own finger near his eye it does not close, because this idea does not then arise. In any case a decided mental action takes place in B. and not in A. On this account we call the closing of B.'s eye a mental reflex, and A.'s a physical one. The mental reflexes are extremely common; stooping at the whistling of a bullet, laughing at sight of a clown, sickness produced by a disgusting smell, are mental reflexes. The involuntary muscular action is caused by a stimulation of the eye, ear, or sense of smell, after the stimulation has been interpreted in a particular way by the consciousness.

The classification of the reflexes into physical and mental is not valueless for us; I think it better at present to keep to this classification, although it is only schematic, and although an authority as high as Lewes supposes a mental action in all reflexes. Gurney, Max Dessoir, and Hückel, have directed attention to the importance of mental reflexes for hypnosis. Heidenhain and Charcot denied any mental action in the contractures which they induced; the Nancy school, on the contrary, believes that it occurs, that the subject knows what is intended to result, but that his will is unable to prevent the contracture; this is called a suggestion, and is only a kind of mental reflex. Consequently the question put forward above, whether Heidenhain's and Charcot's contractures are reflexes, may be thus modified: Have we to do as these authors suppose, with physical reflexes, or with mental ones?

Without wishing to maintain *à priori* that the views of Heidenhain and Charcot are mistaken, I should say that they would at least require careful examination before they could be accepted. Nowadays,

when we know from Bernheim, Forel, Delbœuf, and others, that these things can all, or almost all, be brought about by suggestion—that is, by means of the hypnotic's belief in their appearance—we are obliged to suppose that this is actually the case whenever suggestion is not rigidly excluded in experiment. Heidenhain's experiments offer no guarantee on this point. As the influence of suggestion was then unknown, it was naturally not excluded, and it even appears, from Heidenhain's publications, that the experiments proposed were discussed before the subject. When, then, Heidenhain maintains that the contractures spread according to rule, and even according to the laws for physical reflexes laid down by Pflüger, my own experiments oblige me to doubt it; according to these the contractures progress in proportion to the hypnotic's comprehension of the experimenter's wish or command; so that there can be no question of an adherence to rule.

With regard to Charcot's propositions I will discuss later some particular points—for example, the loss of consciousness in lethargy. I will only remark here that most of the phenomena can be explained by suggestion. In the contractures of somnambulism the thing is clear. Nothing is easier than to cause such contractures by suggestion. If it is to be proved that these really occur without suggestion, suggestion must first be excluded. Only the publication of more exact and detailed accounts of the first experiments made with these subjects would convince us that it was excluded. Unconscious and unintentional suggestion is the greatest source of error in hypnotic investigation. I should conjecture that the contractures of somnambulism are only brought about by mental action. This is also to be concluded from

another phenomenon. We have seen above, in the fourth experiment, that only one person, the experimenter, can influence the subject, is in *rapport* with him, as the technical term goes. Only the experimenter can induce contraction of the muscles; stimulation by other persons has no effect. If the contractions were produced without participation of the consciousness, this would be incomprehensible. Charcot's pupils also speak of this phenomenon; they assert that in somnambulism certain persons only can influence the muscular action of the hypnotics by stimulation of the skin; those persons, that is, who are in *rapport* with the subject. This decidedly favours the view that the contractures are caused by an act of consciousness; though Charcot's pupils have not drawn this evident conclusion.

In the case of contractures in lethargy the question is rather more complicated, particularly in those where a certain group of muscles—for example, those of the ulnar nerve—are acted upon, or those in which an isolated muscle is excited. It would be well here, also, if more exact accounts of the first experiments were published. For it can hardly be avoided, that when the same experiments are repeated certain indications should be given, from which the subject draws conclusions as to what he is expected to do. I have no doubt that by means of such indications even tolerably complicated movements, such as an isolated contracture of the muscles supplied by the ulnar nerve, can be induced; that is, purely by suggestion. With the quick perceptions which hypnotics possess, they could easily be brought to this point. I do not think it at all impossible to induce by suggestion the few movements which Charcot shows in his public classes. I also should note particularly that

Jendrássik, an adherent of Charcot, who accepts his classification of the stages of hypnosis, thinks that the contracture of lethargy is brought about by suggestion only.

It must be admitted that Richer emphatically asserts that in these experiments, which were varied a thousandfold, the results were always identical, that imitation was excluded, and that the stimulation of muscles and nerves at once caused the corresponding contractures which very few physicans would be able intentionally to induce. But it may be concluded from the statement of Vigouroux that the thing is not so plain. He excepts the deltoid muscle from the rule. Gilles de la Tourette also says that the results were only attained after long previous experiment. I will not permit myself to pronounce a final judgment upon contractures in lethargy; in my opinion it is not yet settled whether they take place with or without suggestion.

The phenomena of imitative speech (*echolalie*), observed by Heidenhain and Berger belong to this section. Berger says that hypnotics will repeat everything that is said before them, like phonographs; even what is said in foreign languages is repeated with some exactness. The notion that only certain tracts of the bodily surface must be stimulated in order to produce this repetition (Heidenhain, Berger) may be considered a mistake, the result of insufficient acquaintance with suggestion on the part of the Breslau investigators. I believe that the hypnotic echoes what he believes he is intended to echo. It is certain that some persons are able to perform great feats in this way, imitating a hitherto unknown language quickly and correctly, particularly after the

necessary practice. It is perfectly indifferent whether the speech be addressed to the stomach, or the neck—this was supposed to be the sensitive region—or to any other part of the body. The main point is that the hypnotic should know he is intended to repeat the sounds. Certain reflexes, which are supposed to be induced by touching the head, the appearance of aphasia, or of twitchings or contractures in the arm or leg on touching certain parts of the cranium, should be understood in the same way; statements of this kind were made by Heidenhain, and have been repeated lately by Silva, Binet, and Féré. These last even believe that they can place single limbs in the somnambulic state by stimulating the parts of the head which correspond to the motor centres of the limbs concerned. The experiments have not been carried out with sufficient caution. It is inexplicable that the result should be attained by pressure on the head, and the reference of these authors to the phrenology of Gall explains nothing. Chalande even wishes to study the physiology of the brain in this way (Delbœuf). What would our physiologists say if, in order to stimulate some portion of the brain, it were only necessary to rub the cranium on the corresponding spot during hypnosis? The method would certainly be practicable on account of its simplicity, but unfortunately it is founded on inexact observations, and is perfectly useless. Braid described similar phenomena, which he called phreno-hypnotic. He invented explanations, which were themselves in need of explanation. One of Braid's suppositions was that there was a kind of reflex stimulus. By pressure on a portion of the skull a nerve was stimulated which by reflex action excited a part of the brain, and by this means excited feelings of benevo-

lence, for example; by stimulating another spot, another nerve was excited, which by reflex action produced an expression of piety, &c. Braid appears to have given up phreno-hypnotism later (Preyer).

Let me here point out that it is possible to induce hemi-hypnosis, or hypnosis of one side, by suggestion, or to influence each half of the body in a different way. It was known even to Braid that by blowing on one eye the corresponding side could be awakened. Descourtis, Charcot, Dumontpallier, Bérillon, Lepine Strohl, as well as Grützner, Heidenhain, and Berger, who were under Kayser's influence, carried on these experiments in various modified forms; Berger later on changed his views. Though these authors regard hemi-hypnosis as a physiological condition induced by the closing of one eye or by friction of one-half of the crown of the head, their statements do not now prove their point. We know by this time that we can produce all these states by mental influence, and suggestion must be excluded before the experiments can be considered conclusive. It appears very probable, from Heidenhain's publications, that the expected results were discussed in the presence of the subject, who only needed to divine the expected result to act accordingly. Sometimes stroking the left side of the head was supposed to make the left half of the body hypnotic; sometimes the result followed on the right side. The rules which Heidenhain laid down on this question are not tenable. The main point still is that the subject shall know what is intended to happen to him, and what effect is expected from the processes.

As is evident from what has been said, I regard the functional changes which the voluntary muscles show

in hypnosis as dependent on central conditions ; a suggested idea can cause either paralysis or movement of the limbs. The question must now be discussed whether, in consequence of this suggestive central action, alterations in the functions of the muscles may appear which are not normally to be found, that is, whether the action causes objective abnormalities which could not be induced by the will of the hypnotic.

À priori, I think the probability that there are such changes is not great, for it cannot be supposed that an idea which I implant in the subject should have more effect than the idea he himself originates. If, then, there are some symptoms which are characteristic, this proves that the idea called up by external suggestion, and the self-suggested idea, have different effects on the functions ; or else that the muscles are influenced in hypnosis by something besides suggestion, *i.e.*, the propensity to contracture, of which I have spoken above. We must understand the objective phenomena in one way or the other. I have already spoken of the physical symptoms of suggested paralyses. I will here mention a few other cases in which suggestion heightened the normal muscular powers.

The cataleptic posture of the limbs is sometimes maintained for a very long time, even for several hours. One person remained for seventeen hours in a cataleptic posture. Berger mentions the case of a young girl who maintained this condition without perceptible change for seven hours, during which she was continually watched. In these cases the fatigue and pain which ordinarily follow on great muscular exertion do not ensue. Great fatigue rarely results even when the same position is maintained for as

long as an hour. Some distinctly marked cases of imitative speech (*echolalie*) must be mentioned here. Braid relates that a hypnotized girl once imitated some of the songs of the famous Jenny Lind perfectly, which she was quite incapable of doing in the waking state. Braid attributes this feat to the delicacy of hearing and of the muscular sense in hypnosis.

However, we find in hypnosis frequent connecting links with the normal life. We see that in hypnosis an arm remains longer in the position commanded than a leg, for example. This is because the muscles of the leg are more difficult to fix in any desired posture than those of the arm ; the leg falls more quickly by its own weight.

Dynamometric investigations, that is, measurements of the muscular force, have often been undertaken during hypnosis. I myself have made a number of such investigations, which for the most part agreed with the results of Beaunis. The most important point appears to me to be that in most cases the muscular force is lessened in hypnosis. I have seldom found it increased. I have made these investigations during the different hypnotic states, but have hardly ever found an increase. However, there are variations, and I have occasionally seen the strength of one hand increase while that of the other diminished. I have also obtained different results at different times with the same person. When there were such variations they were always of small amount, and they are the less important that all dynamometric investigations suffer from certain sources of error.

We may here consider the electric excitability of the nerves and muscles, to which little attention has hitherto been paid. Moriz Rosenthal finds an increase

of electric sensibility in hypnosis. Tereg also found changes in one case, which, however, was investigated without the galvanometer ; and Marina has done the same in the case of a person in the waking state who, however, had often been hypnotized. I, for my part, like Heidenhain, Berger, and Rieger, have been unable to discover anything of importance in this direction. I have tried more than a hundred different experiments without finding a perceptible difference on this point between the hypnotic and waking states. I made my experiments with the galvanic and faradic current ; I always used Hirschmann's galvanometer, and made most of the experiments on the ulnar nerve just above the elbow. I have already said that the electric susceptibility is decreased in suggested paralyses ; it appears that electric susceptibility undergoes changes in certain cases from a mental cause ; a further investigation of this would be very interesting. I do not at all believe that we have to do with primary changes in the muscles or nerves. I may just mention that according to Morselli and Mendelsohn the muscles contract more quickly from stimulation in hypnosis than in the waking state.

I have discussed above a whole series of phenomena, which I, in common with the school of Nancy, consider to be produced by suggestion, but which Heidenhain and Charcot, among others, regard as ordinary reflexes, having no mental cause. I have shown that imitative speech (*echolalie*), many contractures, and the newly discovered reflexes of Born and Heidenhain, are probably phenomena of suggestion. There appear to be no new reflexes in hypnosis independent of suggestion ; no sure proof has yet been offered, at least. We must now examine the ordinary reflexes of hypnosis.

I have spoken occasionally of the tendon reflexes, whose increase we observed in the lethargic stage of Charcot, and in certain paralyses by suggestion. Berger has also observed an increase of the patellar reflex. But, as I have often noticed, the increase seems to depend upon the kind of suggestion. I have several times found increases when the muscles were completely relaxed; on the other hand, I have found decrease of the reflexes in cataleptic postures. This is easily explained; it has an analogy in waking states, and must not be too easily regarded as a phenomenon peculiar to hypnosis, since apart from hypnosis the tendon reflexes are more perceptible when the muscles are relaxed than when they are contracted.

With regard to the pupil of the eye, Braid has already mentioned a difference between its states in hypnosis and in sleep. In sleep there is a contraction of the pupil; but Braid found that it often dilated in hypnosis. This is confirmed by Heidenhain. I have never observed this dilatation except when I have employed the method of fixed attention; at other times I have more often found contraction of the pupil. I can confirm Braid's assertion that oscillations of the pupil appear not seldom in fixation; contraction and dilatation alternate rapidly.

Spasm of accommodation is also often mentioned (Heidenhain, Cohn, Rumpf). The assertion that the pupil reflexes are abnormal in hypnosis is often met with. In particular it is said that a ray of light does not cause a reflex contraction of the pupil during hypnosis. I have never observed a complete absence of the reflex, but I have often remarked very slight reaction when I have used the method of fixed attention to induce hypnosis. I do not know whether

this was an effect of the method or of the hypnosis, but am inclined to consider the method as the cause. Sgrosso noticed dilatation of the pupils in his two subjects on the appearance of hypnosis, followed by contraction during the state.

Up to this point we have only studied those changes which appear in the voluntary motor system during hypnosis. The hypnoses belonging to the first group (p. 50) are characterized by various combinations of these changes, which are, notwithstanding, also found in the second group. The hypnotic states belonging to this group are, however, distinguished by an increase of susceptibility to suggestion. The functions of the organs of sense, in particular, are influenced by it. How these act in hypnosis without suggestion it is difficult to say decidedly; the statements of different authors are very contradictory. There is no essential change in the functions of the organs of sense in the light stages of hypnosis; the subject sees, hears, smells, &c., normaliy. According to Liébeault, the senses of sight and taste decrease first, then the sense of smell, then hearing and feeling disappear in turn. But when the method of fixed attention is used, sight is the last to go. According to my experience these statements are not quite exact; if we compare them with those of other authors we find many contradictions. I think that these contradictions occur because the condition of the hypnotic in relation to various objects and persons is not enough considered. For example, he hears the person who is hypnotizing him, and not others; he feels this man's touch, and not another's. For this reason I believe that we must regard the whole state from the beginning as a purely

psychical one. Braid distinguishes two grades, according to the functions of the sense organs; in one an increased activity of sense is shown, and in the other a diminution of it. My observations have not confirmed this.

It is possible to induce all kinds of sense hallucinations in hypnosis. The images produced are so changing that any one who sees them for the first time is justified in doubting whether the phenomena are real or not. We have accustomed ourselves to depend so completely on the perceptions of our senses, to think them such trustworthy witnesses in all cases, that we are indeed astonished when we find that a word suffices to place a hypnotic among utterly different surroundings.

Sense delusions are divided into Hallucinations and Illusions. The first is the perception of an object where in reality there is nothing; the second is the false interpretation of an existing external object. If, for example, a book is taken for a cat, or a blow on the table for the firing of a cannon, we talk of an illusion; but if a cat is seen where there is nothing, we call it a hallucination. We have thus to do with a hallucination when an external object causes a perception by means of association. A chair on which a particular person has often sat, may by association call up an image of that person; this is a hallucination called up by an external object.

We observe numerous hallucinations and illusions in hypnosis. We have seen in Case IV. that it suffices to assert that a dog is present, and a dog will apparently be seen. A handkerchief was in this case taken for a dog, consequently this was an illusion. An illusion is more easily induced than a hallucination; in the absence of an external object, such as the handkerchief, the suggestion very often fails. When I do not offer some such object the hypnotic

often finds it for himself. Hallucinations of sight are more easily caused when the eyes are closed; the subjects then see objects and persons with their eyes shut, as in dreams. They think, at the same time, that their eyes are open, just as we are unaware in dreams that our eyes are shut. If we wish to cause a delusion of the sense of sight at the moment of opening the eyes, it is necessary to make the suggestion quickly, lest the act of opening the eyes should awaken the subject. I advise the use of fixed attention while the suggestion is being made (*cf.* Experiment IV.), so that the subject may not awaken himself by looking about. The other organs of sense may also be deluded. I knock on the table and give the idea that cannon are being fired, I blow with the bellows and make the suggestion that an engine is steaming up. A hallucination of hearing something, *e.g.*, the piano, is induced without the aid of any external stimulus. In the same way smell, taste, and touch may be the senses deceived. It is well known that hypnotics will drink water or even ink for wine, will eat onions for pears, will smell ammonia for Eau de Cologne, &c. In these cases the expression of face induced by the suggested perception corresponds so perfectly to it that a better effect would scarcely be produced if the real article were used. Tell the subject he has taken snuff, he sneezes. All varieties of the senses of touch, of pressure, of temperature, of pain, can be influenced. I tell a person that he is standing on ice. He feels cold at once. He trembles, his teeth chatter, he wraps himself in his coat. "Goose-skin" can be produced by the suggestion of a cold bath (Krafft-Ebing). In like manner itching and so forth can be induced. I say to a gentleman „ To-

morrow at three o'clock your forehead will itch." The post-hypnotic suggestion proves true; the forehead itches so much that the subject rubs it continually. It appears to me that the senses of touch and taste are the most easily and frequently influenced. For example, the suggestion of a bitter taste takes effect much sooner than the suggestion of a delusion of sight or hearing. It is true that the subjects often account to themselves for the delusion; they taste the bitterness, but say at the same time that it must be a subjective sensation, since they have nothing bitter in their mouths.

Sense delusions can be suggested in any way. We can tell the subject that he sees a bird. We can suggest the same thing by gesture—for example, by pretending to hold a bird in the hand—particularly after the subject has received some hypnotic training. The chief point is that the subject should understand what is intended by the gesture.

Naturally, several organs of sense can be influenced by suggestion at the same time. I tell some one, "Here is a rose;" he not only sees, but smells and feels the rose. I pretend to give another subject a dozen oysters; he eats them at once, without further suggestion. The suggestion here affects sight, feeling, and taste at the same time. In many cases the muscular sense is influenced in a striking manner by such suggestions. I give a subject a glass of wine to drink; he lifts the pretended glass to his lips, and leaves a space between hand and mouth as he would if he held a real glass. I am not obliged to define the delusion for each separate sense; the subject does this spontaneously for himself. The subject in this way completes most suggestions by a process resembling the indirect suggestion described on page

58. The external suggestion does not remain an isolated phenomenon, but causes a series of other mental processes, according to the character of the subject and to the hypnotic training he has received. I say to the subject, "Here, take this bottle of Eau de Cologne!" He believes that he feels the bottle in his hand, which in reality is empty; besides which he believes he sees the bottle and smells it, although I add nothing to my original suggestion. In short, he completes it independently. This is a very common occurrence.

Besides which the deception, if it is thorough, is clearly reflected in the subject's expression and gestures. No gourmand could wear a more delighted expression over some favourite dish than does a subject over a suggested delicacy. Very few people would be able to imitate by art the expression of fear on the face of a subject when he believes that a tiger is about to attack him. A subject will drink several glasses of wine by suggestion, will become red in the face, and will then complain of his head. I give a piece of cork to a subject for an onion; he smells it and his eyes fill with tears. We can in this manner place a subject in any situation we please, and from his behaviour under the circumstances draw conclusions as to his character (Morselli). But it would be necessary to exercise caution in such a case, since the subject nearly always has some dim consciousness of his real surroundings, however completely he may seem to be transported into the imaginary ones. I shall return later and more fully to these incomplete sense delusions.

Some authors (Dumontpallier, Bérillon) have particularly directed attention to the suggestions which take effect on one side of the body only. For example, we can cause a dog to be

seen on the right side, and a bird on the left, and so forth; this appears to be only an affair of training and suggestion. It is useless to draw conclusions from this about the independent functions of the two hemispheres of the brain. The case mentioned by Magnin is connected with this; a person affected by weak sight of the left eye, of hysterical origin, believed in the hypnotic state that he saw with the right eye things which he really saw with the left, and so thought they were on his right side when they were really on his left (allochiria).

In contrast with the delusions of sense hitherto described, which are sometimes called positive, there are also negative hallucinations, or negative delusions of sense. The older mesmerists (Deleuze, Bertrand, Charpignon) published many observations of them. This kind of suggestion, which at first seemed more incredible than the positive, nevertheless has analogies in the normal state, like all the hypnotic phenomena. Consider the juggler, who knows how to use the most important psychological laws for practical purposes. Let us watch him carefully, and we shall see how he hides things, how he makes a change, how he substitutes one card for another under the very eyes of the spectators. But he knows how to draw off their attention by clever talk, so that even those who have watched him are unable to give an account to themselves of his proceedings. For example, the cards are changed in the spectator's field of view; the sense stimulation takes place, but does not penetrate to the consciousness. We find analogous occurrences in ordinary life. It has happened to everybody to look for something which is before his eyes. In this case also the thing is not perceived, although it is in the seeker's field of view and he is actually thinking about it. It is no longer incredible, then, that we should find analogous processes in hypnosis. If we can make the hypnotic see what

does not exist, after the above explanation it is no longer surprising that we can prevent his seeing what does exist.

Let us examine such a case. Mr. X. is in hypnosis. Two persons are present besides myself. I tell him, "From this moment you will only be able to see me; you can no longer see the other men, though they are still here." X. then replies to every question addressed to him by these gentlemen, and can feel them, but he cannot see them. This is a negative hallucination of sight only. But a negative hallucination of several senses can be induced as readily as a positive one. I say to X., "The two men have gone away; you and I are alone. From this moment X. neither sees nor hears them, nor perceives them by means of any sense. When I ask who is in the room he replies, "Only you and I." Part of an object or person can be made invisible in the same way. We can cause people to appear headless and armless, or make them disappear altogether by putting on a particular hat, as in the story of the Magic Cap. The situation may be varied in any way we please.

Forel has lately pointed out that the insane often have these negative hallucinations. He has also pointed out that hypnotics complete the hallucination at their pleasure. Thus I say to X., while A. is sitting on a chair, "A. has gone away; there is nobody on that chair." X. examines the chair, and as he feels something there he imagines that a plaid is lying on it. We see here how a suggested negative hallucination passes into an illusion through the autosuggestion of the hypnotic; this is very common. To be exact, we can regard every illusion as the sum of a positive and a negative hallucination, as in each

illusion something present is not perceived and something not present is perceived.

Further, it is possible to prevent recognition of certain colours, and to induce colour-blindness by suggestion. But we have here only to do with a defective perception of colours, and not with an alteration of the stimulus affecting the eye; the disturbance is purely mental (Schirmer). Cohn's assertion that, on the other hand, colour-blindness sometimes disappears in hypnosis, has been justly contested by Königshöfer; at the most this could only be a hysterical disturbance of the sense of colour, temporarily removed by hypnosis, and not a disturbance founded on peripheral alterations.

An entire cessation of the functions of any sense organ can be induced in the same way as a negative hallucination. "You can no longer hear"; "you are deaf," or "you are blind." These words suffice to deprive the hypnotic of the corresponding sense perceptions. Not only does he cease to recognize any particular object, but the sense organ is insusceptible to anything. A command suffices to restore the functions. It is certain that blindness, deafness, &c., can be induced in this way; but the effect is a mental one. Exactly speaking, the corresponding organ of sense performs its functions, but the central process does not reach the consciousness. In the same way the sight of one eye can be prevented though the other can see as usual; a one-sided amaurosis can be created (Borel). Even hemianopia has been observed in hypnosis (Willy).

To this category belongs anæsthesia of feeling. The mucous membranes can be made anæsthetic by suggestion. The fumes of ammonia in the nose, and tickling of the throat are not felt; the conjunctiva can be

touched without producing the corresponding reflex, and even the cornea may become insensitive either spontaneously or by suggestion. Preyer quotes a cynical experiment of the American physician, Dr. Little, who thrust a needle through the cornea of a subject whom he suspected of simulation, in order to test its insensibility. But in my experience these last-mentioned phenomena are uncommon. When this anæsthesia of the conjunctiva and cornea exists, the eye no longer closes on reflex stimulus ; but this is a consequence of the anæsthesia, and not an independent phenomenon (Gurney).

After what precedes, it is hardly necessary to mention that the muscular sense can also be inhibited by suggestion. The frequently observed absence of the muscular sense in a completely anæsthetic arm, of which the subject still retains complete control, is interesting. The state is like that of persons suffering from locomotor ataxy. Such people are able to write correctly, or do anything else with their eyes open, while they do it very badly with their eyes closed (William James, Carnochan).

I have shown above that perceptions of each sense by itself can be prevented by suggestion; but very important hyperæsthesiæ of the organs of sense likewise exist in hypnosis. It is indifferent whether these come on from external suggestion or in other ways, and is besides not always exactly to be distinguished ; the main fact is, that they do exist. Although they are not on the whole very common, I shall here add some of these remarkable cases. It is exactly these rarer cases which deserve the most careful consideration, since they often offer us a key to a natural explanation of apparently supernatural

phenomena, such as transposition of the senses, or clairvoyance.

An increased sensitiveness to touch has been often observed. The two points of a compass are used for examining the least distance of space that can be felt. We try to find out what distance must separate them in order that they may be felt as two separate points. In this way an increase of sensitiveness is found in hypnosis, as the points can be distinguished at a less distance than in the normal state (Berger). I have made a series of experiments on this point, and can confirm Berger's statements. I have found the same thing under pathological conditions. In cases of locomotor ataxy, with profound anæsthesia, increase of sensitiveness has also been found when the patients were under the influence of suggestion; the state may continue post-hypnotically. In one case of locomotor ataxy, I found that on the right fore-arm the two points were distinguished at 6·1 centimetres distance. During hypnosis the separate points were perceived at 4·9 centimetres distance, and after waking even at 4·1 centimetres.

The senses of pressure and temperature become sometimes much more delicate. The hypnotic recognizes things half an inch distant from the skin, and this simply by the increase and decrease of temperature (Braid). He walks about a room with bandaged eyes or in absolute darkness without striking against anything, becauses he recognizes objects by the resistance of the air, and by the alteration of temperature (Braid, Poirault, Drzewiecki). D'Abundo produced enlargement of the field of vision by suggestion.

Bergson has described one of the most remarkable cases of increased power of vision. This particular

case has been cited as a proof of supersensual thought-transference; but Bergson ascribes the result to hyperæsthesia of the eye. In this case the hypnotic was able to read letters in a book which were 3 mm. high; the reading was made possible by a reflected image of these letters in the eye of the experimenter. According to calculation the reflected image could only have been 0·1 mm. ($=\frac{1}{250}$ inch) high. The same person was able, without using the microscope, to see and draw the cells in a microscopical specimen, which were only 0·06 mm. in diameter. Sauvaire, after some not quite irreproachable experiments, supposed the existence of such a hyperæsthesia of sight, that a hypnotic recognized non-transparent playing cards by the rays of light passing through them. A case of Taguet's, in which an ordinary piece of cardboard was used as a mirror, is said to have proved quite as strong a hyperæsthesia. All objects which were held so that the reflected rays from the card fell upon the subject's eye, were clearly recognized. The same thing is shown by a great increase of the sense of smell. A visiting card is torn into a number of pieces, which pieces are professedly found purely by the sense of smell; pieces belonging to another card are rejected The subject gives gloves, keys, and pieces of money to the persons to whom they belong, guided only by smell. Hyperæsthesia of smell has often been noticed in other cases. Carpenter says that a hypnotic found the owner of a particular glove among sixty other persons. Sauvaire relates another such case, in which a hypnotic, after smelling the hands of eight persons, gave to each his own handkerchief although every effort was made to lead him astray. Braid and the older mesmerists relate many such

phenomena. Braid describes one case in which the subject on each occasion found the owner of some gloves among a number of other people; when his nose was stopped up the experiments failed. This delicacy of certain organs of sense, particularly of the sense of smell, is well known to be normal in many animals; in dogs, for example, which recognize their masters by scent. Hypnotic experiments teach us that this keenness of scent can be attained by human beings in some circumstances.

The muscular sense again requires a few words. This sense informs us of the position of our limbs at a given moment. The great dexterity of movement, which is sometimes found in deep hypnosis, must be ascribed to an increased acuteness of this sense. Braid believes that imitative sounds (*echolalie*) must be referred to this, as has been already mentioned.

With reference to this hyperæsthesia of the sense organs, I will quote an experiment which is often repeated, and is wrongly considered as a proof of increased keenness of the senses. Let us take a pack of cards, which naturally must have backs of the same pattern, so that to all appearance one cannot be distinguished from the other; let us choose any card—the ace of hearts, for example—hold it with its back to the subject, and arouse by suggestion the idea of a particular photograph on it—his own, let us say. Let us then mix the cards, and request the hypnotic to find the photograph, of course without having allowed him to see the face of the card. He will often find the right one, although the backs are all alike. The experiment can be repeated with visiting cards or sheets of paper, if the selected one is marked, unknown to the hypnotic. This experiment makes a greater impression on inexperienced people than it need do,

For most people are able to repeat the experiment without hypnosis; I do not think hyperæsthesia is generally a condition for its success. If the backs of these cards and papers are carefully examined, minute differences (*points de repère.*—Binet) will be discovered. I have myself often made the experiment with good results, without hypnosis. There can be no question of simulation here. Naturally, I do not contend that a hypnotic cannot find a paper in such a case better than a waking man; the hyperæsthesia is a fact. I only wish to point out that hyperæsthesia is not absolutely necessary, though this experiment is often used to demonstrate its presence. I have seen men of science of the first rank show astonishment when a hypnotic distinguished apparently identical sheets of paper. They did not consider that there are essential differences in the sheets, which suffice for distinguishing them even without hypnosis. Yung justly says, "It is surprising to see that even scientific people sometimes allow themselves to be confounded by apparently marvellous phenomena." The experiment is to be explained thus: the *point de repère* presented to the hypnotic at the moment when the idea of the photograph was suggested to him, recalls the suggested image directly he sees it again. The point is associated with the image, so that one calls up the other. Binet and Féré have rightly pointed out that the image only recurs when the *point de repère* is recalled to the memory; it must first be seen. Consequently, if the paper is held at a distance from the subject's eyes, the image will not be recognized, for the *points de repère* are not visible. Binet and Féré have made some interesting experiments. They have caused photographic impressions to be made of white papers on which a portrait had

been created by means of suggestion. It was shown that the hypnotic always took the copies for the original, because the photographed *point de repère* aroused the same image in his imagination. Jendrássik has observed the same sort of thing: if a "d" is drawn with the finger on a sheet of white paper, and it is suggested that the "d" is real, the subject sees the "d." If the paper is turned upside down he sees "p," and in the looking-glass "q." This is because the "d" was attached to certain points on the paper, which were what the subject remembered, and when the paper was placed in different positions the points appeared in different positions also.

Suggestion influences common sensation in the same way as the functions of the organs of sense. Nothing worthy of remark takes place in hypnosis with regard to this, unless suggestion is called into play. I may, however, mention the feeling of fatigue which many hypnotics experience; it sometimes appears in the lightest hypnosis, and may also exist in the deeper stages. We can influence common sensation very materially by suggestion in hypnosis. This is not surprising when we consider that it is exactly the common sensations which are most under the influence of mental processes. Just as looking down from a tower causes giddiness, as the thought of repugnant food produces disgust, so we can call up these, and related phenomena, or cause them to disappear, by suggestion. It is in this direction that suggestion has to record its most striking successes, since the common sensations, of which pain is one, are the cause of most of the complaints we hear. As pain, &c., can be induced by suggestion, so by suggestion it can often be banished. I say to a

subject who complains of want of appetite, "The loss of appetite has disappeared; you are hungry." I can cause another to feel thirst. Feelings of pleasure can likewise be excited. Debove, on the other hand, has induced loss of appetite by suggestion to such an extent and for so long a time that the person concerned took no regular meal for fourteen days. Further, it is possible up to a certain point to satisfy the hunger and thirst of subjects in deep hypnosis by merely suggested food and drink, as Fillassier informs us. It is a pity, however, that this result can only be obtained with a few persons, and in a certain measure; for otherwise our politicians would no longer need to puzzle their heads over social questions and the feeding of the masses.

I shall here particularly discuss the feelings of pain. What effect has hypnosis upon them, with and without suggestion? Apart from some particular hypnotic states, in which Berger finds increased sensitiveness to pain, we occasionally find analgesia in hypnosis. Sometimes this exists to such a degree that the severest surgical operations can be performed during the state. It is also known that needles may be run into some persons during hypnosis without their feeling pain, though they feel the touch. And yet a complete analgesia is extremely rare in hypnosis, although authors, copying from one another, assert that it is common. There is an immense difference between pricking the subject with a needle and using the faradic brush. The pain caused by the use of the latter is so great, especially when a considerable electric force is employed, that very few persons in hypnosis can endure it, even when they show no pain on being pricked with a needle. In some cases, where analgesia does

not appear spontaneously, it can be produced by suggestion. But suggestion more easily produces a certain decrease of sensitiveness to pain. Complete analgesia is seldom attained. Many cases described as completely analgesic—for example, those of Tamburini and Seppilli—proved on a closer examination not to be so, as a strong faradic current finally produced pain. I will just remark that all kinds of pain can be induced by suggestion; the pain caused by a needle as well as that caused by a knife or a burn. The face of the subject expresses pain in such a manner, that an impartial person can hardly decide whether the pain is real or suggested.

The state of mind which is intimately connected with common sensations can also be influenced by suggestion. It is consequently easy to induce either sadness or cheerfulness in hypnosis. We often find the view promulgated that the hypnotic is strikingly grave. My experience obliges me to dispute this; most people, on the contrary, seem particularly comfortable in hypnosis (Richet). The method of hypnotization has some influence here. The desires and affections can be controlled in hypnosis as well as the moods. Love and hate, anxiety, anger, and fear can be easily called up, and produce corresponding expressions and postures in the hypnotic.

Abnormalities of voluntary movement apart, nearly all the phenomena of suggestion hitherto described are the exclusive privilege of the second group of hypnotic states. I come now to some other physical functions which require a deep hypnotic state if they are to be influenced. I mention, first of all, the phenomena of that part of the muscular system which is normally independent of the will,

We will here particularly consider the circulation of the blood, and the respiration, as these are essentially results of involuntary muscular action. A large number of physiological observations have been made in this field during hypnosis, in order to decide what is the state of the pulse and respiration without suggestion. Of course the pulse has been often examined, since this is a simple thing to do, and yet the statements about it are so contradictory that we only dare to receive them with caution. Although some have believed they had discovered objective symptoms in changes of the action of the heart and the respiration, we cannot doubt that there has been considerable exaggeration. A great acceleration of the pulse and of the respiration has been often observed when the method of Braid, or fascination (Brémaud), or mesmeric passes (Ochorowicz) were employed. The respiration, which was normally 18 per minute has risen to 50, or even more. I have myself made a number of experiments on this point, and fully agree with Bernheim and Preyer that these changes are not so much an effect of the hypnosis as of the fixed attention. I believe that it is only the effort made which causes these abnormalities; the irregularities in the respiration should probably likewise be ascribed to mental excitement and effort. Preyer mentions that the respiration of a person looking at a microscopic object often changes; in the same way it displays abnormalities when a person believes himself watched. An experienced doctor, therefore, prefers to examine the respiration unobserved by his patient. In any case I have seen a material acceleration of the pulse and respiration set in after long strain of attention without a trace of hypnosis; the respiration also became irregular. If

there is hypnosis, in a little while the irregularity and acceleration cease. I have only seen a few cases in which they persisted, but am by no means inclined to think this a sign of hypnosis, as some persons show an acceleration of pulse and breathing on the smallest provocation. Even a conversation is enough to induce acceleration. I have also seen persons in whom an uncomfortable sitting posture induced changes of pulse and respiration. Besides which it must be added that in many people there is an important acceleration of pulse and respiration in the strong muscular contractions of the cataleptic phenomena (Braid), and also in tonic contracture (Rumpf). If I made such persons lie quietly down, and avoided conversation, physical effort, and mental excitement, I never observed any lasting acceleration. On the other hand, I have often found a deepened and somewhat long-drawn respiration, and also a slight slowing of pulse, in hypnosis. These were the cases which bore a greater external resemblance to sleep, and in which, as I have several times mentioned above, there was no important spontaneous movement. It was also more difficult to induce movements by suggestion in these cases. Beaunis occasionally finds an increased blood pressure in the pulse, which he does not, however, think of much importance. Horsley finds no alteration in the curve of the pulse tracing.

Of any further unsuggested abnormalities of the involuntary muscles there is little to be said. Moriz Rosenthal has observed vomiting, which he ascribes to stimulation of the cerebral cortex. Nausea is occasionally observed in frightened or excited persons (Friedemann).

Let us now ask, To what extent can the involuntary

muscular system be influenced by suggestion? The peristaltic motion is relatively easy to affect. I have had several experiences of the facility with which the bowels of some hypnotics are affected by suggestion. I say to one of them, "In half an hour after awakening your bowels will act." This is certain to happen. "To-morrow morning at eight your bowels will act." The effect follows. "To-morrow between eight and nine your bowels will act three times." Exactly the same result, though the subject remembers nothing of the suggestion on awaking. It is interesting to note that the action of aperients can be checked by suggestion, though this does not often happen. A patient takes a dose of castor-oil which is sufficient to procure copious action of the bowels. He is told in hypnosis that the medicine will only take effect in forty-eight hours. The suggestion is effectual, although with this person the dose habitually acts quickly and abundantly (v. Krafft-Ebing). Or let a few drops of water be given to the hypnotic with the assertion that it is a strong purge; motion of the bowels follows. Suggested emetics act in the same way. This is not very surprising, as we know that these and other functions, even though they are independent of our will, are yet under the influence of the mind. Vomiting at the sight of disgusting things, and the celebrated *mica panis* pills administered as aperients prove this well enough.

In some persons the vessels and the heart can be influenced in the same way, as several experiments have proved. Dumontpallier has made some, which should here be mentioned. He induced by suggestion a local increase of temperature of as much as 3° C. Forel, Beaunis, and F. Myers have also observed local reddening by suggestion. Even this

phenomenon should not surprise us too much, since we observe the same sort of vaso-motor disturbance to result from mental condition. I have spoken above (p. 57) of the blushing which occurs when any one is confused. I will here mention the contrary of this—the paleness which often follows fright. And as a curiosity I will mention the local reddening of the skin which has often been observed in spirit mediums (Carpenter, Carl du Prel), and which has been explained as a supernatural phenomenon. As these mediums are often at these times in a state of trance—that is, in a state resembling hypnosis, and perhaps identical with it—this phenomenon admits of a perfectly natural explanation.

Some observations have also been made upon the influence of suggestion on the action of the heart. I myself have often been able to produce a slowing of a normal or rapid pulse. However, we should be cautious how we draw the conclusion that the suggestion has affected the nerves of the heart directly; the effect is an indirect one, rather. For, independent of the fact that the action of the heart is to a certain degree dependent on the respiration, it is likewise under the influence of ideas, which affect the emotions. Such ideas have the power of quickening or slowing the heart's action; it is possible that the suggestion which retards a quick pulse only produces this result indirectly by a removal of the mental exciting cause, or, *vice versâ*, quickens the pulse by excitement. My observations of the quickening and slowing of the heart's action by suggestion leads me to take this view rather than that of a direct influence of suggestion on the nerves and nerve centres of the heart. In any case it would be difficult to exclude this indirect action, especially

as its effects are rapid. However, the method is of no consequence. Beaunis has seen a momentary effect of suggestion in several people without change of respiration from suggestion. He has seen the pulse fall in consequence of suggestion from 98 beats to 92, and then rise to 115 beats. He infers a direct action of suggestion upon the inhibitory centre of the heart, and thinks himself also obliged to exclude ideas which affect the mental state, such as are mentioned above, since the effect of the suggestion was always momentary. But his reasoning on this point is not conclusive.

Respiration, which holds a middle position between the voluntary and involuntary movements,[1] can also be influenced by suggestion. From motives of prudence I have never continued such experiments for longer than half a minute. I suggested to the subject that he could not breathe ; an apparently complete pause in respiration followed. Jendrássik relates a case in which he inhibited respiration for three minutes, simply by assuring the subject that he could not breathe.

We find but scanty accounts of physiological researches into the processes of secretion during hypnosis.

Perspiration has often been observed (G. Barth, Demarquay, Giraud-Teulon, Heidenhain, Preyer). I doubt if the secretion of sweat depends on the hypnosis ; I believe that it is rather a result of the straining and excitement of fixed attention. We know a little more about the influences of suggestion. Burot shows that secretion of saliva can be

[1] That is, it is generally involuntary, but up to a certain point it is under the influence of the will, and can be accelerated or retarded.

induced by suggestion, and Bottey demonstrates the same thing of perspiration. Charles Richet shows that erection and emission of semen can be effected by it, so as to produce on the subject an impression of sexual intercourse. I have mentioned above that I have myself seen a hypnotic's eyes water when it was suggested to him that he was smelling an onion. Heidenhain induced discharge of urine by tickling the perinæum. I do not think this phenomenon should be regarded as a physical reflex; I believe that the patient emptied the bladder because he believed that he was intended to do so. Preyer mentions this as an example of secretion; I hold a different opinion; I believe that the patient did not *secrete* the urine in consequence of the external stimulus or command, but merely passed it. This is, then, a motor suggestion. I have often been able to produce the same effect: "After waking you must make water five times." The patient is surprised after the hypnosis that he wishes to make water so often, but obeys. Few investigations have been made as to whether the kidney secretions can be influenced by suggestion However, Wetterstrand mentions results produced in diseases of the kidneys which almost justify the conclusion that in certain persons it is possible to influence the kidney secretions by suggestion. This is not so strange when we reflect that many diseases in which there is increased secretion of urine are of nervous origin, and that anxiety and fear also appear to influence it.

Krafft-Ebing draws conclusions as to the increase of intestinal secretions from one experiment. He suggested to his subject a profuse watery evacuation of the bowels, which followed. As the bladder had been emptied shortly before, and only a small quantity

of urates had been found in the urine, Krafft-Ebing thinks himself obliged to consider the fluid as an increase of the intestinal secretions.

Some special investigations have been made of the organic changes during hypnosis, but no sort of conclusion can be drawn from them in any case. Brock finds that in a short hypnosis of twenty minutes' duration, with partial catalepsy, the sum of the solid constituents and the phosphoric acid decreases; as Strübing has described in catalepsy. But as Brock forgot to examine his patients under analogous circumstances, sitting quietly without hypnosis (Preyer), his experiments are not conclusive. In any case no conclusion as to the action of the brain must be drawn from them. Brock concludes that the activity of the brain is lessened, because the quantity of phosphoric acid is decreased. Gürtler is much more cautious in his conclusions. He also finds a difference in the phosphoric acid; it is true that he has not made a sufficient number of comparative experiments with the same subject in analogous circumstances, without hypnosis. He refrains from drawing final conclusions, because to justify these the evacuations of the bowels and the respiration must be investigated also.

The experiments of some investigators who produced a change in the bodily temperature must be reckoned to belong to this section. Krafft-Ebing's experiments are particularly surprising. He succeeded in producing any temperature he pleased in his subject. The most enigmatical point with regard to this appears to me to be that the subject showed the exact degree of temperature commanded—namely, 36° C.—when examined by the thermometer. As it is evidently

utterly out of the patient's power to influence this instrument mentally, we must assume an astonishing capacity for regulating the temperature of the body. The experiments carried out by Marès and Hellich are very interesting. They often succeeded in lowering the temperature of a hypnotic from 37° C. to 34·5° C., in twenty-four hours. This result was not produced by immediate suggestion, but rather by suggestive influence on the feelings of cold and warmth.

I now come to some phenomena which, for the most part, will awaken distrust. I mean the anatomical changes effected by suggestion during hypnosis. But however enigmatical this may appear, we have only to do with quantitative differences in phenomena, which we have observed elsewhere. The physiognomy of certain professions—for example, the type of the clergy shows how mental processes gradually exercise an influence on organic construction. The mental moods and occupation impress their stamp by degrees upon the physiognomy.

The most general and frequently repeated experiment carried out in hypnosis, is to induce the subject to believe that a blister has been applied to him, and thus to obtain real blisters. The whole collection of observations on this point are not free from objection. Even when exact accounts of the experiments are published, the sceptic has sufficient cause for hesitation. But every man of science should be sceptical, not of these statements in particular, but of all statements. The reason for hesitation with regard to the above experiments is, as a rule, the insufficient watching of the subject. But if the published experiments are not convincing they are at least worthy of consideration. It is a fundamentally false principle to dispute

such things *à priori*, either because we have not ourselves seen them or because they are rare. This false principle is far too much acted on, according to my view. For there are certain things which are rare; for example, some monsters, and triplets, and also millionaires, and yet they are none the less to be seen sometimes. Every one believes in their existence without having seen them. Consequently, neither rarity nor the fact that we have not seen a thing ourselves precludes its existence. For this reason the rare observations of others are of importance.

Among the experiments in this direction I will first of all mention the cases in which menorrhagia is induced or arrested by suggestion. It is not to be doubted that this is practicable in the case of certain persons. Forel has made a whole series of experiments on this point, and has also partly confirmed the accuracy and the effect of suggestion by personal investigation. Many other experimenters have also been able to confirm the effect of suggestion on menstruation (Sperling, A. Voisin, Gascard, Briand). Liébeault's statement that he was never able to cause abortion by suggestion is curious. The influence of suggestion in menorrhagia seems less wonderful and striking when we reflect how very much psychical influences otherwise affect it. It is known, for example, that the periods often become irregular in women who are about to undergo a surgical operation.

I have mentioned the influence of suggestion in this place in spite of the fact that these experiments do not, properly speaking, demonstrate an organic influence. We may be concerned here with a vasomotor disturbance, which secondarily induces the organic changes. This appears to me probable.

Jendrássik and Krafft-Ebing obtained marks like

burns on their subjects by means of suggestion. If some object, such as a match-box, a pair of scissors, a snuff-box, a linen-stamp, &c., was pressed upon the skin, and the subject was at the same time told that the skin was being burned, a blister in the form of the object resulted. The marks remained a long time visible. If the object was pressed upon the left side of a hysterical patient anæsthetic on the right, the burn appeared symmetrically on the right as it would if reflected in a glass, as could be especially seen when letters were used. Jendrássik maintains that deception was absolutely excluded in these cases of suggested burns. Besides this, a dermatologist, Lipp, at one of the experiments, declared that it would be impossible to cause the suggested lesion mechanically or chemically. Burns caused by suggestion have often been observed in the Salpêtrière. The same may be said of the experiments of Bourru, Burot, and Berjon, who induced bleeding by suggestion in the same subject as Mabille, Ramadier, and Jules Voisin. Puységur had witnessed the same thing. Bleeding of the nose appeared at command in the above-mentioned subject, and later on bleeding from the skin at a time decided on beforehand. When the skin had been rubbed with a blunt instrument in order to give point to the suggestion, bleeding of the skin is said to have appeared at command, the traces of which were visible three months later. It is interesting that in the case of this person, who was hemiplegic and anæsthetic on the right side, the suggestion would not take effect on that side. Mabille's observations of this subject are particularly interesting, because they show that a person in hypnosis can cause these bleedings by auto-suggestion. Unfortunately the accounts we possess of such cases do not enable us to draw a definite

conclusion as to whether contact will induce bleeding under other circumstances (F. Myers). Meanwhile we must remember that the bleeding did not follow closely on the contact, which would have been the case if the effect were mechanical. Berjon reminds us, also, that precautionary measures were taken to prevent the subject from touching his own arm, and thereby causing a wound.

Everybody will here remember the stigmatics of the Roman Catholic Church. Bleeding of the skin is said to appear in them, generally in spots which correspond to the wounds of Christ. The best known is Louise Lateau, of Bois d'Haine, near Mons, who was much talked of in 1868. It appears from the literature concerning her, that the anatomical process was rather a complicated one in her case (Virchow, Lefebvre). Blisters first appeared, and after they burst there was bleeding from the true skin (*corium*), without any visible injury. I will not enter into the question of simulation, which a Belgian doctor, Warlomont, decided was impossible, after personal investigation. Delbœuf and others believe that the phenomena were caused by auto-suggestion. Lateau directed her own attention continually to those parts of her body which she knew corresponded to the wounds of Christ, and the anatomical lesions resulted from this strain of attention, as in other cases from external suggestion. Virchow, as is known, thought that fraud or miracle were the only alternatives. In the well-known case of Catherine Emmerich the bleedings are said to have appeared while she was looking at the crucifix. Without deciding as to the reality of these phenomena, since no scientific investigation was undertaken, or was even possible, I will remark that at present a natural explanation of the facts is possible, because such things can be induced by suggestion in a suitable mental state. The conditions resemble each other ; the ecstasy of Lateau has a great likeness to the hypnotic state. Ecstasy and hypnosis have many points in common, and are, perhaps, identical conditions (Mantegazza).

The Catholic clergy, many of whom, as Sancha Hervas, condemn hypnotism altogether, object to the identification of stigmatization with suggested bleeding. Méric denies the

possibility of a comparison. But Méric does not reflect that an auto-suggestion in ecstasy may have exactly the same effect as an external suggestion. Méric maintains that stigmatics are certainly not in an abnormal condition, but quite awake. But as far as Lateau is concerned, she was evidently not awake; that is, if we take it for granted there was no fraud in the case. Lateau spoke to certain persons only; consequently some *rapport* existed as in hypnosis.

The experiments of Delbœuf also belong to the class of organic lesions. He experimented, in common with Winiwarter and Henrijean, and he produced symmetrical burns, and made one of the wounds painless by suggestion. It was observed in this case that the painless wound showed a much greater tendency to heal, and, in particular, that the inflammation showed no tendency to spread. As, however, there are some slight anomalies, the experiments are not fully convincing.

I now come to some experiments in which the hypnotic was told that a blister had been applied to him, which blister was really only an ordinary piece of paper. As Binet and Féré inform us, this experiment was first made as long ago as 1840, by the Italian doctor, Préjalmini, and Du Prel tells us that in 1819 a sloughing of the skin was obtained on a hypnotized somnambule of Celicurre de l'Aupépin, by means of a piece of linen, although the linen had been applied like a simple plaster. Focachon, an apothecary of Charmes, has recently repeated the experiment. Sometimes alone, and sometimes in company with the Nancy investigators, he has applied pieces of paper, suggesting that they were blisters. He is said to have often produced blistering. Beaunis has published an exact report of some experiments of this kind. After the suggestion had lasted twenty-one

hours the paper was taken off, and it was found that the skin was thickened, dead, and of a yellowish tint; later, perhaps as a result of the pressure of the clothes, several small blisters appeared. The reverse experiment has also been successfully made by the Nancy investigators; the effect of a real blister has been counteracted by suggestion. Meunier has published an account of such an experiment made at Nancy. Forel, of Zürich, who has done so much for the development of hypnotism in Switzerland and Germany, has often tried to produce organic changes by means of suggestion. Thus, after an endeavour to produce blisters by suggestion little pustules of acne appeared. Besides this, Prof. Forel has made some other experiments, the results of which he has kindly allowed me to publish.

The experiments were made on a nurse, twenty-three years old, who is not at all hysterical. She is the daughter of plain country people, and has been for a long time an attendant in the Zürich Lunatic Asylum, which Forel directs. He thinks her a capable, honest person, in no way inclined to deceit. The experiments were as follows: A gummed label was fixed upon her chest above each breast; the paper was square. In no case was an irritating gum used. At midday Forel suggested that a blister had been put on the left side; and at six o'clock in the evening a moist spot had appeared in this place; the skin was swollen and reddened around it, and a little inflammation had appeared also on the right side, but much less. Forel then did away with the suggestion. On the next day there was a scab on the left side. Forel had not watched the nurse between noon and six o'clock, but had suggested that she could not scratch herself. The other nurses said that the sub-

ject could not raise her hand to her chest, and made vain attempts to scratch. Forel repeated the experiment later; he put on the paper at 11.45 a.m., and ordered the formation of blisters in two and a half hours. Little pain was suggested, and the nurse therefore complained but little. At two o'clock Forel looked at the paper on the left side, for which the suggestion had been made, and saw around it a large swelling and reddening of the skin. The paper could be with difficulty removed. A moist surface of the epidermis was then visible, exactly square like the paper. Nothing particular appeared under the paper on the right side. Forel then suggested the dis-

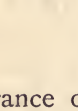


Fig. I

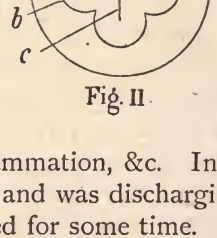


Fig. II

appearance of the pain, inflammation, &c. In spite of this the place suppurated, and was discharging for eight days, and the scab lasted for some time. Even when Prof. Forel related this to me, seven weeks later, the place was still brownish. The nurse was a little annoyed and uneasy about the experiment, and she was not strictly watched while it lasted.

A few days after this experiment Forel drew two light crosses with the point of a blunt knife on the same person. They did not bleed. Another cross (shown in Fig. 1) was made on the inner side of each fore-arm. Several doctors were present. Forel suggested the appearance of blisters on the right side.

Even at the end of five minutes, during which Forel watched the subject, so that fraud was out of the question, a considerable reddish swelling of the skin had appeared (Fig. 2, *a*). A wheal, *b*, looking like nettle-rash, had formed itself round the cross, *c*, somewhat in the shape of a cross. On the left side nothing was to be seen but the cross that had been drawn, unaltered, as in Fig. 1.

The wheal on the right side resembled a vaccination pustule, in the form of a cross; but it was simply a papular swelling, as in nettle-rash. Forel then suggested the disappearance of the swelling and the wheal, and, further, the appearance of a drop of blood at the end of an hour. At the end of this time a very small drop was to be seen; but the wheal, redness, and swelling had disappeared. But as Forel had not watched the subject during this hour, he attached no importance to the drop of blood, which might have been caused by a prick.

Forel wished later to watch this experiment in vesication from beginning to end. But the subject was made very angry and excited by the words and gestures which showed her that she was mistrusted. In Forel's opinion this caused the non-success of the experiment. After this no more vesication appeared, either with or without watching; a slight reddening of the skin was all that was obtained. Forel holds the very plausible view that the subject's mental excitement was prejudicial to her later suggestibility. Among the above-mentioned experiments he only considers the one in which the papular swelling was produced to be proved; as concerns the others he reserves his opinion, since no strict watch was kept.

Stress must be laid on the fact that Forel only made a gentle scratch to give point to the suggestion.

The injury, such as it was, did not cause the wheal; for if it had, the same thing would have appeared on the other side of the subject. It may be objected that the same force may not have been used to make the mark on both sides. However, it should be said that the nurse was not one of those persons who get a wheal whenever their skin is slightly stimulated. This seems conclusive to me. She showed wheals, only when bitten by gnats. When her skin was scraped it showed a disposition to redden, but wheals never formed. She had, besides, often been scratched by insane patients, but no remarkable result had ever been observed.

It should be added that there are people who develop wheals under mental excitement without hypnosis. A very trustworthy observer told me of the case of a person who had once been much frightened by a thunderstorm, and who showed afterwards wheals with a red border whenever a storm was approaching.

It is to be understood that great caution is necessary in dealing with experiments in which anatomical injury is caused by suggestion. This is all the more necessary because, from one philosophical point of view, that of Du Prel, the experiments are already regarded as proving that the soul is an organizing as well as a thinking power.

(2) *Psychology.*

In the foregoing sections we have studied the physical changes of hypnosis. We have seen how strikingly suggestion modifies the different functions. I have already had occasion to touch upon some psychical phenomena, closely connected with the

physical. In what follows I shall frequently be obliged to refer to the physical phenomena, the variations in which, during hypnosis, are purely the result of changed central processes. Our conclusions as to these central processes must be drawn, then, from the physical functions.

We shall now study the changes which the mental functions undergo during hypnosis. As a matter of course, I shall not note each individual mental action ; I shall only discuss such as are characteristic from our present point of view.

For practical reasons I must first speak of the memory, because it determines the other psychical activities. Without memory no action of the understanding is possible ; memory is a necessary condition for an independent activity of the consciousness and the will.

Memory, in its broadest sense, consists of three parts : firstly, of the power of retaining ideas ; secondly, of the power of reproducing these ideas ; thirdly, of the power of recognizing the ideas and of localizing them correctly in the past. To make this clear, let us take any event which we remember—for example, a severe scolding given to us by a teacher. The memory in this case acts in three ways : in the first place, what is said is received and retained in it ; in the second place, the memory can reproduce the lecture ; and in the third place, we can place it in its correct position in time, by recalling its relation to other events, &c. It will be made clear in what follows that under certain circumstances these different processes of the memory show abnormalities in hypnosis.

The retention of ideas in hypnosis has been little investigated. Beaunis has found no essential difference in this respect between hypnosis and waking life. Max Dessoir has also made experiments, whose results he has communicated to me. From these it

appears the memory is weakened in hypnosis, when this is not prevented by suggestion. Dessoir repeated a number of syllables which the hypnotic was to try to remember; a suggestion of improved memory was carefully avoided. Under these circumstances the hypnotized subject remembered fewer syllables than did the same person awake. The older mesmerists, on the contrary, believed that the memory was intensified in the magnetic sleep; poems could be learnt by heart in a much shorter time than in the normal state. However, these investigators did not avoid suggestion.

Is the chain of memory in ordinary life broken by the hypnosis or not? It was formerly supposed that a break in the memory occurred, because the subject always forgot on awaking what had taken place during hypnosis. But this view has not proved correct.

In the lighter hypnotic stages, specially in the first group, no abnormality of memory is found; the subject remembers everything in the hypnosis which concerns his normal life, and after the hypnosis remembers all that has occurred. In the deeper hypnoses it is very different; they belong for the most part to the second group, and there is loss of memory after the hypnosis. The subject is much astonished when he hears what he has done during the hypnosis—that he has been running about, that he has had hallucinations, &c. Often, however, a dim memory persists, like the memory of a dream. I suggest to some one the hallucination of a bird flying about the room; the hypnotic tries to catch it, amuses himself for a long time with it, gives it sugar, puts it in an imaginary cage, and so on; after waking he dimly remembers that he has seen a bird, but that is all; he certainly does not believe that he has left his seat.

However, there are certain people who recall everything after being told what they have done.

In other cases, associations of ideas will call up memory. A hint is given to the hypnotic after the awakening and everything recurs to him (Heidenhain). There is something of this sort in dreams; we very often remember a whole dream when we see some object that is in any way connected with it (Delbœuf). The same thing happens when a person is able to repeat a quotation or a poem directly he has heard the first words. Let us consider an example in hypnosis. I suggest a great concert to a subject; he hears various pieces, and among them the overture to "Martha"; meanwhile he eats his supper at the concert, drinks his beer, and talks to imaginary people. After the awakening there is no trace of memory. I ask him then if he knows the opera of "Martha"; this suffices to recall nearly all the events of the hypnosis. Sometimes memory is aroused in the same way by pure chance, after a longer or shorter interval. X. believes in hypnosis that he sees a number of persons at my house whose presence I have suggested to him. X. goes through several scenes with them, but remembers nothing on awaking. Only when he meets one of these people several days later does the whole thing recur to him. Delbœuf draws attention to one method of making the memory last; he thinks that subjects remember any hypnotic event if they are awakened in the middle of it; but this is certainly not universally true (Gurney). It sometimes happens that the first or last occurrences are remembered, while all the others are forgotten. It has often been observed that memory after awakening can be produced by a special effort of the hypnotist (Bleuler, Pierre Janet). Some persons remember all the hyp-

notic proceedings during their nightly sleep ; it is not rare for the hypnotic dream to be repeated in natural sleep.

However, in some cases, chiefly in the deepest hypnoses, memory cannot be recalled by any of the above-named expedients, though some think that a carefully directed conversation will always re-constitute it through the association of ideas. In such cases there is complete loss of memory in the waking state. Such a person does not even generally know how long he was in the hypnotic state. On the other hand the subject remembers in hypnosis all that has happened in previous hypnoses. Things that happened in hypnoses dating many years back, even as many as ten, may be recalled, although they are completely forgotten in the waking state. Wolfart relates the case of a woman who remembered in the magnetic sleep all that had taken place in a magnetic sleep thirteen years before, although in the meantime she had never recollected it.

Events of the normal life can also be remembered in hypnosis, even when they have apparently been long forgotten. This increased power of memory is called hypermnesia. Benedikt relates a case of it. An English officer in Africa was hypnotized by Hansen, and suddenly began to speak a strange language. This turned out to be Welsh, which he had learnt as a child, but had forgotten.

Such cases as these recall others which are mentioned in the literature of hypnotism ; for example, the famous one of the servant who suddenly spoke Hebrew. She also, in an abnormal state of consciousness, spoke a language which she did not know, but which she had often heard when young in the house of a clergyman. We hear of like cases of hyper-

mnesia in dreams. Maury, whose investigations on the subject of dreams are classic, relates a number of things which returned to his memory in dreams, although when awake he knew nothing about them. The heightened faculties of hypnotic subjects of which we so often hear, and which we can observe in auto-hypnosis also, are a result of this increased power of recollection. Many apparently supernatural facts may be explained in this way. Among these I may mention the carefully constructed religious addresses, sometimes supposed to be inspired, which are delivered by pious but uneducated fanatics in a peculiar psychical state of ecstasy; and the eloquence occasionally displayed by some spiritualistic mediums in trance belongs to the same category. Bastian also describes such increase of natural powers in hypnosis among savage populations. In many cases other factors may be at work besides the improvement of memory, such as hyperæsthesia of the organs of sense, &c.

Dreams, also, which have occurred in natural sleep are sometimes reproduced in hypnosis, although they may have been forgotten on waking. It is naturally very difficult to judge of the accuracy with which dreams are reported. But as dreams sometimes lead to talking in sleep, it is then possible to make observations. I know of a case in which a person betrayed his dreams by talking in his sleep; the loss of memory which followed on waking disappeared in hypnosis, and the dream was remembered. A bedfellow was able to confirm the accuracy of the recollection.

But, apart from these cases of hypermnesia it is characteristic that in the deeper hypnotic states not only the events that have taken place in earlier hypnoses

are remembered, but also the events of waking life. On the other hand, in the waking state the events of that state alone are remembered. This state of things is named "double consciousness" (*double conscience* in the broad sense of the term). It was evidently well known to the old mesmerists—Kluge and Deleuze, for example—and was later observed by Braid, though not in the early part of his experience.

The state of double consciousness is also found under pathological conditions. One of the best-known cases was published by Azam. The life of the patient for nearly thirty years was divided into certain periods—a, b, c, d, e, f. In the periods a, c, e (normal condition) she remembered only what had happened in them; in the periods b, d, f (second condition) she remembered what had occurred in these periods, as well as what had happened in the periods a, c, e. The normal state was a, c, e, while the pathological one was b, d, f. Max Dessoir's thoughtful work on the "Doppel-Ich" contributes much to the elucidation of this question of double consciousness; he shows that indications of such a splitting of the consciousness are much more common than has hitherto been believed; he refers us to examples in dream-life and in pathological states. But it appears to me that Max Dessoir, perhaps, supposes a greater extension of these phenomena than is really the case; Bentivegni makes the same reservation. I shall return to the double consciousness with more detail in the theoretical part of the book.

One phenomenon which I have often observed depends on memory in the later hypnoses. If a whole series of scenes is suggested to a subject in hypnosis a very slight impulse suffices to cause the whole panorama to pass before him again in a later hypnosis. A hypnotic imagines himself hunting a lion; he kills the lion and cuts it to pieces; and then by suggestion he is turned into a general, and then into a child. In a later hypnosis he hears an unex-

pected noise, which he immediately believes to be the roaring of a lion. In consequence he goes through all the scenes again, without omitting the smallest detail. This incident may be counted among the indirect suggestions, since the auto-suggestion was aroused by an accidental circumstance. The case observed and quoted above by Mabille, in which a person induced hæmorrhage by auto-suggestion, after it had once been induced by external suggestion, belongs to the same category. The subject separated herself, so to speak, into two persons, one of whom made the suggestion to the other, as is proved by the conversation she carried on with herself. The subject's recollection of all that he has experienced in earlier hypnoses is most important. The possibility of hypnotic training depends upon this, and it is also a frequent cause of error in new experiments, since they are easily spoiled by memory of the earlier ones. I say to the hypnotic (X.), "You will now raise your left leg." X. does so. While I make the suggestion I unintentionally take hold of his right hand. When, in a later hypnosis, I take hold of his right hand, he again raises his left leg. Evidently he remembers the first event, and regards the taking of his hand as an order to lift his leg. It is probable that the new reflexes which Born thought he had discovered, and which I have mentioned before, came about in this manner.

I have hitherto described the state of things when suggestion is not called into play. Suggestion exercises a most active influence. In the first place, hypermnesia can be increased by suggestion; though as far as I know no careful investigations have yet been made on this point. But we possess many accounts of careful investigations into the possibility

of inducing errors of memory (paramnesia), or failures of memory (amnesia); Bertrand collected many observations on these points. These memories may consist of former perceptions; the suggestive influence of these former perceptions has often been observed; by means of them the subject may be completely deluded about his former experiences. As these suggestions have a certain retroactive force, they are called retroactive suggestions; or, as they are concerned with sense perceptions altered by suggestion into sense delusions, they are sometimes called retroactive hallucinations. They are positive or negative, according as a new erroneous memory is created or an old one annulled. I say to a subject, "You remember that we went to Potsdam yesterday, and took a drive on the Havel?" The suggestion takes effect, and the gentleman at once begins to relate his experiences in Potsdam. This is a retroactive positive hallucination. Again, "You have just been running extremely fast; you ran half a mile as hard as you could go." In this case the delusion of memory is so great that palpitation and gasping for breath follow, in consequence of the imaginary race (Delbœuf). These are positive retroactive hallucinations, because the hypnotic believes he has experienced something which did not really happen. The following would be a retroactive negative hallucination, as the hypnotic here forgets something which did happen: I say to him, "You have not had any dinner; you have not had any breakfast." Upon which he immediately feels hungry, as he thinks he has had nothing to eat since he got up.

Many motor disturbances of which I have before spoken may be reckoned as related to amnesia, or

loss of memory. For example, when I tell somebody that he cannot lift his arm, or that he cannot speak, I am sometimes dealing with loss of memory, because a movement is made impossible if the memory of it cannot first be called up. This is the case in those paralyses which some French authors (Binet, Féré) call *paralysies systématiques*—a paralysis for a special act. Such a paralysis is not followed by total functional incapacity of a whole group of muscles; the function is rather interfered with for one particular use only. The incapacity to say *a*, or to sew, for example, would be a paralysis for a special act; if the person could not speak or move his arm at all, this would be a total paralysis. It is possible in this way to deprive the subject of all memory of the letter *a*, so that he can neither speak nor write it. These forms of loss of memory become very clear when we consider the disturbances which may be produced by suggestion in the signs we use for mutual comprehension; that is, in vocal sounds, gestures, and writing. It is possible to produce almost all kinds of aphasia experimentally, as Kussmaul, Arndt, and others have clearly demonstrated. We can cause any one to forget a language he has learnt—French, for example (Forel, Frank); we can make writing impossible (agraphia). By a suitable suggestion a hypnotic can be deprived of the power of making himself understood by facial expression (amimia). Drawing, sewing, every form of activity in fact, can be prevented by suggestion.

It is known that there is a particular group of disturbances of speech in which the perception of words is wanting; this is called sensory or amnesic aphasia. The patient still attaches ideas to words. But it is possible by means of suggestion to deprive him not

only of the perception of a word or letter (*e.g.*, the letter *a*), and of the consequent power to write and speak it; he can also be deprived of the idea which he attaches to such a word or letter. This difference will become clear if we observe the behaviour of a person under the different circumstances. If he retains the idea of the letter he is conscious of his inability to utter or write it; he is aware that he is writing or speaking nonsense, and even tries to avoid using words in which the letter *a* appears (Max Dessoir). But if he is deprived of the conception or idea of the letter, he is no longer surprised that he cannot write or speak it. This becomes still more interesting in post-hypnotic suggestion. It is possible to cause a post-hypnotic loss of memory, and to make the subject invariably replace one letter by another. I told a hypnotic that after he was awakened he would always say *e* instead of *a*. I woke him, and asked, "Are you awake?" "Je" (Ja), he replied. "What have you been doing?" "Ich heb geschlefen" (ich habe geschlafen). The subject laughed, but was at the same time slightly annoyed, and was perfectly aware that he was talking nonsense. But if the *idea a* were also missing, the subject would say *e* instead of *a* without observing it.

I have shown above that subjects may be made to forget certain of their experiences (negative retroactive hallucinations).

In the same way whole periods can be made to vanish from the subject's consciousness. Mr. X., who is forty-three years old, was told, "You no longer remember anything that has happened to you since you were thirty!" This sufficed to cause a blank in X.'s consciousness. He was unable to answer any questions about this period; he did not know how he

made my acquaintance, nor how he got into my room; when such questions were put to him he shrugged his shoulders and answered, "I don't know."

It is possible to carry this still further, and transport the subject back to an earlier period of his life. In this case the subject finds no gaps in his memory; he believes that he is living in this earlier time, and brings his present surroundings into relation with it. Here is a man who fought at St. Privat in the French war. His age was forty-one; I suggested to him that he was nineteen years younger, and in the battle. He stood up at once, gave military orders, and commanded the artillery to fire. When I asked him if he knew Dr. Moll, he said, "No; my doctor's name is R. I do not know Dr. Moll." He knew nothing that had happened since the battle; he was unaware of the rheumatism for which I was treating him; he said he was quite well. When I asked him who I was, he replied that he did not know. It was interesting that he could not be induced to retreat; I tried to make him take a few steps backward, but he replied, "I will not retreat one step without orders." I suggested that the enemy was still approaching, but nothing would induce him to retreat. When I drew his attention more and more upon myself, and told him that he must know who I was, the situation suddenly altered. He recognized me, and knew his real age, but had no idea of what had just passed.

I caused a lady, æt. 34, to believe that she was eight years old again. She spoke to her doll in a childish voice, cried when she thought I was about to take it away, and called for her mamma.

Finally, it is possible to make a person believe that he has never been born. Even this suggestion will

be accepted, and the consciousness will be an absolute blank.

New memories can be created at the time the old ones are cancelled. This is the case with the phenomenon which Charles Richet describes as *objectivation des types.* In this case the subject believes himself another personality, another being; not only do many memories connected with his own *ego* disappear, but he also endeavours to connect the remaining memories with his suggested personality. Durand de Gros was acquainted with these phenomena; he appears to have studied them in America, where they were already observed in 1840.

I told a certain Mr. X. that he was Dr. Moll, and that I was Mr. X.; upon which he asked me to take a seat, that he might hypnotize me. He did hypnotize me; that is, he went carefully through the process which I go through with him, and did not forget to make several pleasant suggestions.

I experimented with another man, in whom these phenomena are very easily produced. He would represent with dramatic vividness any character which was within the grasp of his ideas. I told him, "You are Napoleon I.," upon which he assumed the famous posture of Napoleon after the battle of Waterloo, but spoke German, as he did not know French. As Frederick the Great, he walked with a crutch in the well-known gait, and knew nothing about railroads. Subjects can be made to believe they are animals; they will bark like dogs, or croak like frogs. They can even be changed by suggestion into inanimate objects, such as stoves, chairs, tables. When X. thinks himself a chair he crouches down on both legs; when it is suggested that the chair has a broken leg, he sinks

his knee to the ground and rests on one leg; when he is a carpet he lies flat and motionless. These experiments in suggestion may be carried still further. "You are made of glass," I say to a subject; he stands perfectly still. When I tell another that he is made of marble, he stands stiffly and cannot be moved; but directly he believes himself to be made of wax he becomes plastic and allows himself to be placed in any attitude.

It should be remarked that the subject always obeys, even when he believes himself an inanimate object. Moreover, hypnotized subjects are by no means always consistent; they often forget their part, though this may be generally prevented by training. For example, another person, whom I had changed into Frederick the Great, travelled contentedly in a railway carriage, evidently not reflecting that there were no railways in those days. Another, whom I had carried back into the year 1864, spoke of the new German Empire, of the Emperor William, and so on. In spite of such inconsistencies, the mental images are much more consistent with hypnotics than with many lunatics who believe themselves to be kings and prophets. The inconsistencies of lunatics are much greater, and hypnotics sooner get rid of them. Besides this, when they represent a new personality, memories of former experiences disappear more completely than is the case with lunatics (Cullerre).

The change of personality in hypnotic subjects has often been compared with the performances of actors. It is a fact that the actor who himself creates the idea of his part, and allows himself to be governed by it, will play his part the best. This is the opinion of Dumesnil; others—for example, the famous Clairon—held a different opinion on this point. In any case few actors are able to accommodate and assimilate themselves

to their own idea of a character, *e.g.*, that of Julius Cæsar, as thoroughly as a hypnotic subject can do. The subject is not distracted by sense perceptions, while the most accomplished actor cannot always avoid being affected by his surroundings. Some actors, in order to play their parts as naturally as possible, call up imaginary objects by force of imagination, so as to place themselves amongst suitable surroundings.

These changes of personality, and the changing of hypnotic subjects into animals, remind us forcibly of the stories of changing men into animals (zoanthropia), which was occasionally epidemic in the Middle Ages and later. People believed themselves changed into animals—usually into wolves. Such persons attacked and tore others, and displayed the fierceness and the instincts of wild beasts. This phenomenon was supposed to be the work of the devil; Johann Wier tells us many strange things about it. Herodotus and Pliny mention like phenomena.

Graphological investigations have been undertaken in several quarters in order to decide whether the handwriting of the hypnotized subject changes with the personality, and if the change bears any relation to the suggested personality. Changes have been observed (Lombroso, Ferrari, Héricourt, Richet Varinard, Mayeras). The expert Hoctès, however, thinks that the subjects' writing is never altered to such a degree as not to be recognizable. I have never seen changes of handwriting follow on changes of personality; only when I placed the subjects in different periods of life has the handwriting altered. As children they wrote awkwardly and made faults of spelling; as old people they wrote shakily. The trials made with Krafft-Ebing's patient, who wrote different hands, corresponding to the different earlier periods of her life, are very interesting; but, unluckily, the writing could not be compared with the true normal writing of the subject at those periods. Nuel's statement that in hypnosis the writing always

differs from the subject's normal hand, and that consequently hypnotic signatures may always be distinguished from others, seems to me too general. He is probably right when he says that in many cases the writing of hypnotic subjects is irregular and spasmodic.

I will here remark that all the above-mentioned suggestions influencing the memory can also be made post-hypnotic, and in all hypnoses it is only necessary to tell the subjects before awakening them that they will remember everything, and they will do so. Also, in some of the hypnotic states, memory may be prevented by command. We can also cause loss of memory of particular events or things; for example, we can prevent the recollection of certain letters, as we have seen before. Retroactive hallucinations can be transferred to waking life in the same way. I say to a subject in my house, "You know that we drank two bottles of wine just now, and that we had roast goose for supper." When he answers, "Yes," I further tell him that after he wakes he will remember all about it. He wakes and relates it all; he declares he has eaten too much, and that the wine has made his head heavy; he even thinks himself slightly intoxicated. This is a purely imaginary intoxication produced by suggestion. Hytten relates an even more interesting case; he says he has cured real intoxication by suggestion.

These delusions of memory may last for weeks and months. However, I have seen them disappear a short time after waking. A man, who directly after waking believed he had seen his mother at my house before the hypnosis, forgot all about it after a few minutes. We had spoken of other things in the meantime, and this probably caused the rapid

oblivion. Bernheim has lately shown that in some cases the subject forgets not only what has taken place during the hypnosis, but also what immediately preceded it, and this without any kind of suggestion having been made.

I shall speak of these delusions of memory transferred to waking life when I discuss the legal side of the question. Bernheim first pointed out their great importance, and rightly called attention to analogous occurrences in waking life. For example, there are people who will repeat a lie so often that at last they no longer know whether they are lying or not. The mental image is called up again and again as they talk, and each time becomes more vivid. Bernheim also shows that complete delusions of memory can be induced in certain people without their ever having been hypnotized. It is only necessary to repeat to them confidently that such and such a thing has happened, and they become unable to distinguish fact from fiction.

I have already mentioned several cases in which changes of memory in the waking state have been caused by post-hypnotic suggestion. The memory in later hypnoses can be influenced in the same way. For instance, we can make the loss of memory, or the paramnesia above mentioned, continue in later hypnoses. And the subject may be made to forget in later hypnoses what happened in the earlier ones, just as he may be made to forget in the waking state what has happened in hypnosis. It suffices to tell him that in later hypnoses he will not remember this or that.

I have said above that hypnotic subjects remember the events of earlier hypnoses in later ones. But this statement needs some limitation, apart from what has just been said. In the first place, we see that when there is a change of personality, there is generally loss of memory also; a subject as Napoleon does

not remember what he did as Frederick the Great. I further mention some little unconscious actions, which cannot be recalled to the subject's memory; I say, for example, "In five minutes you will say, 'Ha!' three times." The subject obeys, but remembers nothing about it later. In the same way certain post-hypnotic suggestions may be obeyed in a new hypnosis, and the subject may be unconscious that they were suggested in an earlier one.

Finally, Gurney supposes two stages of hypnosis, distinguished from each other by completely different memories. The old magnetizers described such stages. I have been unable to convince myself of their existence, and think them a result of hypnotic training. Gurney distinguishes two stages, *a* and *b*. In stage *a* the subject knows nothing of stage *b*; and in *b* nothing of *a*. I do not dispute that in some persons several sharply divided states of consciousness may exist, apart from the waking consciousness; this is also affirmed by Krafft-Ebing and Pierre Janet; I only object to speaking of it as universal.

I have spoken several times of post-hypnotic suggestion. This is a point of such importance in medicine and psychology that it must be examined in detail. No serious observer can doubt the reality of post-hypnotic suggestion The old mesmerists observed some cases of it. In 1787 Mouillesaux ordered a lady in the hypnotic state to pay a visit to a certain person the next day; the command was exactly obeyed (Du Prel); Kluge, Schopenhauer, and Noizet mention other cases. Liébeault, Richet, Bernheim, and Delbœuf have lately studied post-hypnotic suggestion; Gurney and Forel in particular have done so in various ways. It is certain that many

suggestions are obeyed post-hypnotically. Jendrássik has seen a paralysis last several days in consequence of hypnotic suggestion; Krafft-Ebing successfully suggested to one of his patients to maintain a definite bodily temperature for a fixed time. Reddening of the skin has also been induced by post-hypnotic suggestion. Any suggestion that takes effect in hypnosis will also take effect post-hypnotically; movements and delusions of the senses, itching, pain, action of the bowels, hunger, thirst, &c., can be induced. Dreams can be influenced. "To-day you will dream that you are at Swinemünde; you will go on the Ostsee in a boat with six people; the boat will be upset, and you will fall into the water and wake." The subject dreams this in detail. Dreamless sleep can be induced in the same way; or at least the subjects do not remember if they have dreamt.

It is possible to carry on suggestions from hypnosis into waking life; they are then called continuative suggestions. I suggest that my photograph is on a visiting card, and say that the subject will continue to see it after awakening. The subject is firmly convinced that the photograph is there. According to Londe an illusion of this kind has lasted for two years. This carrying on of the suggestion into normal life happens sometimes by chance, when the suggestion has not been cancelled before the awakening. One of my subjects drinks what has been suggested to her as peppermint water; I awake her, and she says for an hour after that she has a taste of peppermint in her mouth. The following often-repeated experiment belongs to the continuative suggestions: I say to the subject, "Count up to ten, and wake when you get to three." He counts up to ten, but is awake while counting from four to six.

In other cases the suggestion only takes effect after waking. I say to the subject, "You will not be able to move your right arm after you wake." He wakes, and is unable to move it, though otherwise in a normal state. Exactly the same effects may be produced after an interval of hours, days, weeks, and months. I say to a subject, "When you come to see me in a week you will not be able to speak when you come into the room." He comes to see me in a week, and is fully awake when he enters the room; I ask him his name, but he is unable to say it, or anything else. Here we have an example of fulfilment of suggestion after an interval, or *suggestion à échéance*, deferred suggestion.

It is remarkable that these deferred suggestions should have at first aroused so much incredulity, since analogies are certainly to be found for them in normal life. Post-hypnotic suggestions may be divided into two groups; but I make this division merely for practical convenience in considering them. In the first group the suggestion is forgotten on awakening, in the second it is remembered. It will be explained in the theoretical section that the loss of memory in the first group is only apparent. I shall thoroughly discuss this group first, as it is the more important and interesting.

The moment for the fulfilment of the suggestion can be decided in several ways. To one subject I say, "An hour after you wake you will hear a polka played; you will believe you are at a ball, and will begin to dance." To another, whom I wake at eight o'clock, I say, "When the clock strikes nine you will take the water-bottle from the table, and walk up and down the room three times with it. The moment of fulfilment is decided differently in these two cases.

In the second case the moment is decided by a concrete external sign ; in the other an abstract term, an hour, is fixed.

The suggestion in this second example, where the moment of action is decided by some external sign, nearly always takes effect, especially after a little hypnotic training. The first more rarely succeeds. There are some subjects, however, with whom such suggestions take effect punctually. But the greater number are not only unpunctual, but often do not execute the suggestion at all, if some external impetus is not given ; others carry out the suggestion, but inexactly—in forty-five minutes instead of one hour, &c.

I will point out a frequent source of error in these time experiments: this is the behaviour of the spectators. They look at the clock at the appointed time, or make some other unconscious signal that the right moment has arrived. This has sometimes happened in my own experiments.

There is a third way of appointing the moment for the execution of a post-hypnotic suggestion, which has been carefully experimented upon by Gurney and Pierre Janet. In many respects it is like the first method. I say to a subject (X.), "When I rub my foot along the floor for the tenth time after you awake, you will laugh." The subject wakes, and does not remember my order. I talk to him, and rub several times without his paying any attention ; at the tenth shuffle he laughs. Consequently the suggestion has taken effect. I make the experiment again, but at the fourth shuffle I ask X. if he has not heard the noise. He says, "No." Nevertheless at the tenth shuffle he laughs, though he is quietly talking to me. In most experiments the result was less

exact. The suggestion succeeded, but not at the right moment.

Many deferred suggestions resemble these suggestions in which the moment of fulfilment is fixed by counting. Post-hypnotic deferred suggestions can be made in two ways; for example, on the 3rd of May I say to a person who sees me every day, "On the 6th of June, when you come into the room, you will see me with a black face, and you will laugh at me." The suggestion succeeds. But here a fixed date is named which helps the subject to carry out the suggestion, in the same way as the striking of the clock in the case first quoted. Delbœuf, in particular, has pointed out the importance of this. In this case also we have a concrete sign. It would have been another matter if I had made the suggestion thus: "On the 35th day, reckoning from to-day, you will come into my room and see me with a black face," &c. According to Gurney's observations, suggestions of this kind succeed, and a few of my own experiments confirm him. An example may make this sort of suggestion clearer. I suggested once to X., "You will come to my house on the sixteenth Tuesday, reckoning from last Tuesday, and will abuse all the people present," &c. This suggestion succeeded completely, although no fixed time was named. I shall return to an explanation of this later on.

I have as yet only discussed the manner of determining the point of time for the carrying out of the post-hypnotic suggestion. The question now is, What is the condition of the subject while carrying out the post-hypnotic suggestion? So far as I know, Dumontpallier, Beaunis, and Liégeois were the first to remark that post-hypnotic suggestions were certainly not carried out in a waking state, even if the

action took place after the awakening from hypnosis. The question has led to lively discussion ; Forel and Gurney have made the best and most numerous observations in regard to it ; in particular they have shown that the post-hypnotic suggestion may be carried out in very different states.

To give the reader an idea of these states, I will show some examples. A man (X.), thirty years old, is in the hypnotic state. I say to him, "When you wake, directly I cross my knees you will take the inkstand from the table and put it on the chair." He wakes at my order, and I talk to him. After a time I cross my knees ; he begins to stare at the inkstand and hardly answers me. He goes to the table, takes the inkstand and puts it on a chair ; upon which I suggest to him that he sees his brother, that he is eating his luncheon, &c., all of which suggestions he accepts. I am obliged to re-awaken him to put an end to this new state of suggestibility. After waking he remembers absolutely nothing. This case is characterized by loss of memory of all that happened during the state, and further by susceptibility to suggestion. I do not know how this state is to be distinguished psychologically from a true hypnosis, and to my mind Delbœuf is right when he says that to make a post-hypnotic suggestion is really to order a new hypnosis at a fixed moment, and the carrying out of the suggestion in this new hypnosis. There are other very different cases. I say to a hypnotized subject, "When you awake, directly I rub my hands together, you will forget your name. When I separate my hands you will remember it again." The order is obeyed ; we talk to one another, but when I bring my hands together the subject forgets his own name. He is, however, completely awake,

and incapable of accepting any further suggestion. When I separate my hands he knows his own name, and knows also that he had forgotten it a moment ago. Directly I bring my hands together he forgets it again. He goes away, and in a few days we meet again; but now he remembers his name, however I hold my hands. But he remembers perfectly that the other day he was several times unable to say his own name. He maintains that he was awake all the time.

We are not justified in calling this case one of hypnosis. There was no mental symptom of hypnosis, no loss of memory, no suggestibility, no fatigue; the subject did not think he had been asleep; nothing remains but to consider the state a perfectly normal one, except on one point. Whether such a state may be regarded as normal, generally speaking, is another matter. I shall discuss this when I come to the legal question, for which these cases are very important (Bentivegni).

It appears from these examples that post-hypnotic suggestions may be carried out in various different states. Between the two extremes—the one case in which there were all the mental symptoms of a new hypnosis, and the other in which there were none—there are many degrees which will now be discussed.

Here is another example. A woman is hypnotized. A. and B. are present. I say to the subject, "When A. speaks to you after you wake you will laugh at him. When B. speaks to you, you will put out your tongue at him. Wake!" The suggestion is exactly carried out. A. speaks to the subject and she laughs. I ask, "Why did you laugh just now?" "I did not laugh." And she positively insists that she did not laugh. A. speaks to her again and again; she laughs, and again

at my question she denies having laughed. She puts out her tongue at B. when he speaks to her, and the moment after, when I question her, she says that she did not do it. I suggest that she hears a barrel-organ ; but she says she does not, and is insusceptible to other suggestions. She remembers everything else that has happened, and knows perfectly what I have said to her. All that is forgotten is the post-hypnotic act and what is connected with it ; *i.e.*, the words which A. and B. spoke to her. She can repeat what I said to her, and her replies ; everything, in fact, unconnected with the suggestion. She knows nothing about the time during which she carried out the suggestion ; at the same time she recognizes no gap in her memory.

In this case there is complete loss of memory of the post-hypnotic act, and no further suggestibility ; the loss of memory extends simply to the post-hypnotic act. This is, then, a third way in which post-hypnotic suggestion is carried out, and it is not rare.

In other cases the subject remains susceptible to suggestion while he performs the act, but wakes directly it is over and remembers nothing about it. It is difficult to distinguish these cases from those just described ; on that account I shall not make a separate group of them ; for it seems that subjects like the person described in the third example are really always susceptible to suggestion while they are carrying out the act, but that in many cases the act takes place too quickly to allow of a fresh suggestion being made. The post-hypnotic act is completely forgotten, while the state of the subject before and after the action is quite normal. Liégeois thought this a separate state, which he called "*condi-*

dition primé." He gave up this later, and now calls the state "*condition seconde provoquée ;*" Beaunis calls it "*veille somnambulique*," Gurney, "trance-waking." I think, however, that these states must be considered true hypnoses (Delbœuf). Evidently, the suggested idea is so powerful in them that it produces a state analogous to that in which it was first implanted. When the idea vanishes the state also vanishes.

Here is a fourth case. I suggest to X. to take a chair and put it on the table five minutes after he wakes. The suggestion is carried out. While he is putting the chair on the table I call out suddenly that a dog is biting him. He believes it, kicks away the imaginary dog, and wakes spontaneously. He remembers moving the chair and remembers the dog, but says the whole thing was like a dream.

Consequently this state is characterized by suggestibility during the carrying out of the post-hypnotic suggestion ; but there is also memory. It is true that X. feels as if he dreamed it. He has a consciousness of having slept through the performance, and of having waked when it was ended. This consciousness of having slept is very important (Delbœuf). We often have some life-like experience in a dream, and yet know directly we wake that it was a dream. I think that the last-described post-hypnotic state must be considered a hypnosis. The suggestibility is very characteristic.

In order not to complicate the question I will recapitulate. Amongst the post-hypnotic states we have studied—(1) a state in which a new hypnosis characterized by suggestibility came on during the carrying out of the suggestion ; loss of memory afterwards, and no spontaneous waking ; (2) a state in which no symptom of a fresh hypnosis was discoverable, although

the suggestion was carried out; (3) a state in which the post-hypnotic suggestion was carried out, with complete forgetfulness of the act, with or without fresh susceptibility to suggestion, and from which the waking was spontaneous; (4) a state of susceptibility to suggestion with loss of memory following. In judging of these states I think the chief symptoms are, firstly, the fresh suggestibility, and secondly, the subsequent loss of memory. Whether the subject wakes spontaneously or has to be again awakened, is of secondary importance, as spontaneous waking is observed in ordinary hypnoses.

Gurney has directed attention to a particularly important device for estimating the mental state during the carrying out of a post-hypnotic suggestion. We have seen that the renewed suggestibility is of great importance in deciding whether a fresh hypnosis has been induced or not; and Gurney has made use of this post-hypnotic suggestibility for solving the question.

The subject (X.) is shuffling cards. We wish to find out in what state he is, and he is therefore told while he is shuffling, that when the clock strikes he will jump up three times. He has finished shuffling and is quite awake. There is nothing to show that he is still in hypnosis; he is not susceptible to suggestion. He does not remember shuffling the cards, and contends that he has not done it; but directly the clock strikes he jumps up three times. From this post-hypnotic susceptibility to suggestion we conclude that he was not in a normal state when he was shuffling the cards. Whether this state was hypnotic, or was another peculiar mental state, as Beaunis and Gurney suppose, is another question. I incline to think it a true hypnosis.

Gurney thinks that in order to properly estimate and characterize this state we must take memory into consideration also. We have seen that subjects in later hypnoses remember what has occurred in earlier ones. If now the events of earlier hypnoses should be present in the post-hypnotic state we should consider it a fresh hypnosis. Now I have often found that there was a complete recollection of the events of earlier hypnoses while the post-hypnotic suggestion was being carried out. This fact also favours the supposition of a fresh hypnosis.

Finally, there are cases in which physical symptoms may be found. It would be interesting to observe these during post-hypnotic suggestion. The fixed look and blank expression often seen during the carrying out of the suggestion also favour the idea of fresh hypnosis.

It may be concluded from what has been said that post-hypnotic suggestions may be carried out in various different states. This is the case not only when we compare one subject with another, but when we observe the same subject under the influence of different suggestions. The questions upon which it all hinges are—1. Does the subject remember later on what he has done, and does he remember the events of earlier hypnoses while carrying out the suggestion? 2. Whilst doing what has been suggested is he susceptible either to suggestions to be carried out at once, or to new post-hypnotic suggestions? 3. Has he the look, the manner, the physical symptoms usual in hypnosis or not?

The question becomes even more complicated when we consider the following experiments of Forel. Forel said to a nurse, "Whenever you say 'Sir' to the assistant physician you will scratch your right

temple with your right hand without noticing it." The nurse did so, talking clearly and rationally all the time. She did not notice that she was scratching her face.

Here the subject behaves normally, and yet the post-hypnotic suggestion is executed during the conversation with complete loss of memory. When the subject acts once with loss of memory, is this state hypnosis or is it some other state? I think it should be regarded as a normal part of waking life, for it would be a mistake to conclude a hypnosis from the mere forgetting of one act, without susceptibility to suggestion. Gurney points out that loss of memory alone cannot be taken for proof of an abnormal state, because in normal life we perform actions and see objects without remembering them afterwards. If the action is a purely mechanical one, such as winding a watch, we often remember nothing about it.

I have purposely in the last section only discussed movements and acts executed post-hypnotically. But all sorts of delusions of the senses, positive and negative, can be induced post-hypnotically at pleasure. We can cause whole scenes to be gone through ; the subject will go to a ball, or dinner, &c. The state of the subjects during the realization of a post-hypnotic delusion may differ considerably. But in my experience it is almost a rule that the induction of a post-hypnotic delusion should induce a fresh hypnosis with susceptibility to suggestion and subsequent loss of memory.

It is possible besides to influence subjects in these states in any way (Forel). For example, we may make the suggestion thus: "You will see a dog five minutes after you wake; but you will remain awake and not allow anything else to be sug-

gested to you." The subject may be in this way protected from further suggestion; he will then carry out the first suggestion, but for the rest will appear fully awake. Messrs. X. and Y. are at my house. I hypnotize Y. I say to him, "When you wake X. will be sitting on this chair; you will remain awake." When he wakes he believes that he sees X. in the chair, and talks to him, &c. I draw his attention to the real X. and say, "Which is the real X.? You see one in the chair and one standing before you." Y. feels the chair and the real X. to find out which is air and which is reality. He feels about and finally concludes, "He is in the chair." And yet Y. is not susceptible to suggestion on other points.

In what precedes I have discussed the state of the subject during the carrying out of the post-hypnotic suggestion. It will not take long to consider the state between waking and the execution of the suggestion. The subject is then nearly always fully awake, and insusceptible to suggestion; the state is, in fact, the same as if he had been wakened without previous post-hypnotic suggestion. However, there are some cases in which the awakening is not complete so long as the effect of the suggestion lasts; this occurs particularly when the suggestion is repugnant to the subject's character and will. Such subjects look tired and sleepy, and often say themselves that they are not quite awake. I have had cases in which I was obliged to cancel the suggestion before I could completely awaken the subject. However, this has never occurred when the post-hypnotic suggestion had a therapeutic aim, but only in experiment. I think the resistance of the subject is partly to blame. In other cases I have observed a subjective discomfort instead of the

feeling of fatigue, till the suggestion was executed. This subjective discomfort is sometimes felt without the suggestion being carried out. One lady to whom it had been suggested that she should put a book on the floor woke in great discomfort, but it did not occur to her to put the book on the floor. She recovered herself however when, at my request, she had put the book on the floor in a waking state. Another subject complained of a twitching in the arm after waking; I had suggested to him to give me his hand when he woke. He did not do it till I asked him again in the waking state; he was aware of nothing but the twitching.

As in all the above cases of post-hypnotic suggestion the command was not remembered, it is particularly interesting to observe how the subjects try to account for their execution of the suggestions. Naturally, I shall here only consider the cases in which the action is not immediately forgotten; in the others the subjects do not try to find reasons for actions which they have forgotten.

Let us take an example. I say to a hypnotized woman, "After you wake you will take a book from the table and put it on the bookshelf." She wakes and does what I told her. When I ask her what she has been doing, she answers that she has moved the book from the table to the shelf. When asked for her reason, she answers, "I do not like to see things so untidy; the shelf is the place for the book, and that is why I put it there." In this case I suggested an action to the subject; she does not remember my order but believes she has so acted of her own accord, from love of order. This phenomenon has often been observed (Richet), and is so common that some con-

sider it the rule. This, however, can hardly be said (Forel). Let us go on with our experiment. I suggest to the re-hypnotized subject to take the book from the shelf and lay it under the table, which she does. I ask her why she did it ; she can give no reason. "It came into my head," she answers. I repeat the experiment several times. To a new request for her reason she finally replies, "Something made me feel as if I must put the book there." In this case the subject, who at first believed she was acting freely, came by degrees to recognize the constraint put upon her ; she, perhaps, suspected the suggestion, but was not sure of it.

Another case. I suggest to a hypnotized man to use an insulting expression to me when he wakes. He wakes, and after a pause of a few seconds, during which his face expresses an inward struggle, he calls out "Donkey!" When he is asked why he so insults me, he makes many excuses, and explains, "I felt as if I must say 'Donkey!'"

Here we have to do with a paradoxical action ; the man knew at once that constraint was being put upon him ; the woman who performed the simpler act above described only perceived the constraint after several experiments.

However, in a great number of cases the result is different. I tell a hypnotized subject that when he wakes he is to take a flower-pot from the window, wrap it in a cloth, put it on the sofa, and bow to it three times. All which he does. When he is asked for his reasons he answers, "You know, when I woke and saw the flower-pot there I thought that as it was rather cold the flower-pot had better be warmed a little, or else the plant would die. So I wrapped it in the cloth, and then I thought that as the sofa was

near the fire I would put the flower-pot on it; and I bowed because I was pleased with myself for having such a bright idea." He added that he did not consider the proceeding foolish, he had told me his reasons for so acting. In this case the subject carried out an absurd post-hypnotic suggestion; he was unconscious of the constraint put upon him and tried to find good reasons for his act. Most experimenters have observed that their subjects try to find reasons for the most foolish suggested acts.

It is also to be observed that when the subjects are questioned as to their motive they make different answers; they either believe that they have so acted of their own accord, and invent reasons for their proceedings, or they say they felt impelled to act so, or they only say, "It came into my head to do it." We can use suggestion here also. When the original suggestion is being made, it may, at the same time, be suggested to the subject to believe he has acted of his own free-will, or to believe that constraint was put upon him.

When such a suggestion is not made, it depends upon the subject's power of self-observation which reason he gives—whether he perceives the constraint, or invents false reasons for his conduct. Something also depends upon the frequency with which the experiment is made, and particularly upon the greater or less absurdity of the suggested act.

This endeavour of the subjects to find a motive for their apparently free acts is very instructive; since, though they believe themselves free, they are really acting under constraint. This mistaken feeling of freedom has been used by several psychologists lately to demonstrate the powerlessness of human will. A state has been produced by experiment, in which the

subject is convinced that he is acting freely, while in reality his will has been directed in a particular manner, unconsciously to himself. Ribot, Forel, and others especially point this out. Spinoza's saying, "The illusion of free-will is nothing but ignorance of the motives for our choice," appears to find support in these hypnotic experiments (Forel); it is certainly proved that one of the chief supports of the doctrine of free-will, *i.e.*, our feeling that we might have acted otherwise, is not enough to prove free-will. The following experiment, which I have repeated in various ways with several subjects, shows this. I suggest a post-hypnotic act to a subject—for example, I tell him to lay an umbrella on the ground. The subject now wakes, and I tell him to do anything he pleases; but at the same time I give him a folded paper, on which I have written what he is to do. He does what I have suggested, and is much astonished when he reads the paper afterwards. He declares that this time he was quite sure he would do something else than what I had suggested.

However, I believe that in spite of these hypnotic experiments, we should hesitate to draw general conclusions about free-will; for though hypnosis is not a pathological state it is an exceptional one, from which we must not draw general conclusions. Few who have made such experiments often can fail to feel occasional subjective doubts of freedom of will, but from these doubts to scientific proof is an immense step. Further, it should not be forgotten that we do not by any means find these deep hypnoses and subjective delusions of the judgment in all subjects. On the contrary, such subjects are in the minority. Also, after repeated experiments they begin to observe themselves, and are aware of the

constraint put upon them, particularly when the suggested action is opposed to their natural disposition. Before we can draw final conclusions we must find analogous cases in ordinary life; which, indeed, has often been done. We will go back to the art of conjuring. A well-known trick of the conjurer is to allow a card to be drawn from a pack and to guess it. The trick is thus explained: the spectator thinks he has freely chosen the card, but in reality the conjurer has directed him to one in particular, and compelled him to select it. The conjurer often attains this end by putting the card he wishes chosen where it will naturally be the first to be taken up. It need hardly be mentioned that I do not draw conclusions against freedom of will from this example.

We can then with certainty, by means of post-hypnotic suggestion, compel many actions which the subject in normal circumstances would refuse to perform. We may, in consequence, consider such acts purely compulsory. I ask a man to tell me something which he would never voluntarily do; he replies that he would never throw a sofa cushion at my head; all the same, when I suggest this to him in hypnosis he does it, after a short resistance. These compulsory acts have a great resemblance to the impulsive acts which we sometimes see performed in pathological states. When the signal for the carrying out of the post-hypnotic suggestion is given the subject feels an impulse exactly like that felt by many morbid persons, in whom the sight of a sheet of water arouses a desire to commit suicide or murder (Cullerre). The same effort to resist the impulse may be observed in these patients as in hypnotic subjects. Bentivegni has lately pointed out the analogy between these patho-

logical impulses and the above-mentioned post-hypnotic suggestions. The patients dominated by this imaginary necessity are fully aware of their unfortunate state, but are none the less impelled to action (Maudsley); in the same way a subject dominated by a post-hypnotic suggestion often recognizes its folly, but finally succumbs.

Post-hypnotic suggestions are of especial value for the induction or prevention of future hypnoses. In this way an easily hypnotizable subject may be prevented from allowing himself to be hypnotized by another person. Post-hypnotic suggestion is an excellent means for protecting susceptible people and guarding them against unexpected hypnosis, as Ricard pointed out with regard to the somnambulic state. Mr. X., whom I had often hypnotized, had also often been hypnotized by Mr. A. I suggested to X. that he should in future only allow himself to be hypnotized by doctors, and on no account by Mr. A. After this Mr. A. could no longer hypnotize him. However, I do not believe that this is a perfect protection in all cases. But the chief danger, which does not arise from susceptibility to hypnotism, but from susceptibility to hypnotism against the subject's will, is thereby guarded against. On the other hand it is possible to throw a subject into an unexpected hypnosis by means of post-hypnotic suggestion. I say to a subject, "Directly I say the word 'to-day' you will fall into a fresh hypnosis." I then wake him, and he remains awake till I say "to-day"; upon which he is instantly thrown into a fresh hypnosis.

It is difficult to say to what length of time the carrying out of a post-hypnotic suggestion may be deferred, since this depends upon the patient's character and the method employed. The longest

post-hypnotic suggestion I have seen was executed at the end of four months; no hint had been given to the subject in the meantime. The longest which has ever been described, as far as I know, was in a subject under Liégeois and Liébeault; in this case exactly a year elapsed before the suggestion was carried out. The case of the photograph, mentioned on p. 140, in which the photograph remained visible for two years, is rather different, as it appears that the suggestion was often recalled to the subject's memory in the meantime. The case mentioned by Dal Pozzo is, perhaps, of the same kind: a person who was afraid of thunderstorms was cured of the fear by suggestion; the effect is said to have lasted twenty-six years (Belfiore).

These deferred suggestions are not very common, and depend upon the power of the subject's memory. But by clever management of the association of ideas they can often be obtained; I have observed them in nearly all hypnotic subjects belonging to the second group. I am surprised that Binswanger has only observed one such case, in spite of his more numerous experiments.

I have hitherto only discussed those post-hypnotic suggestions in which there is loss of memory after waking from the hypnosis. This loss of memory greatly favours the carrying out of the suggestion. But loss of memory is not absolutely necessary; post-hypnotic suggestion succeeds also in light hypnoses, where there is complete recollection after waking. These cases, though more rare, are highly interesting, because the compulsion can be better observed in them. The subject may be able to say to himself, "The suggestion was made to me in hypnosis; I

remember it perfectly, but I cannot help obeying it." One of my colleagues, a doctor, was in the hypnotic state; I suggested abnormal movements to him with success; sense delusions did not succeed. I told him that after he woke he would be unable to say his name whenever I laid my hand on his forehead, and further that instead of his own name he would always say mine. The suggestion succeeded perfectly. When he woke from the hypnosis, whenever I put my hand on his forehead he said his name was Moll; he knew his right name also, but was unable to say it. He remembered my order about it, and did not believe in any supernatural force; he knew that the effect was mental, but could not help himself. It is the same thing with sense delusions; they also can be induced post-hypnotically, in spite of the fact that the suggestion is remembered. It is true that the effect of the sense delusion is in such cases often not to be seen, because, as the order is remembered, reasoning is possible, and thus the suggestion is negatived. Nevertheless, sense delusions with remembrance of the suggestion are rarer because sense delusions with loss of memory are rarer, even though memory can always be restored by suggestion, as we have seen. In any case the subjects who remember the suggestion are always more conscious of the compulsion which it exercises upon them than those who do not; these often believe they have acted of their own accord. Sometimes suggestion only succeeds with difficulty and after a long struggle, in consequence of the subject's resistance and control of his consciousness.

We have now studied the memory and the post-hypnotic suggestions dependent upon it. We have

seen that the faculty of memory is an important one in hypnosis ; it is also a chief condition for the continuance of mental activity. This is certainly much circumscribed by suggestion in the deep hypnoses.

But a certain adherence to rule in the chain of ideas, conditioned by the laws of association, exists in many deep hypnoses. When, without hypnosis, we form in our own minds a mental image—of a fir-tree, let us say—a number of other images are formed in connection with it: we think of Christmas Day, presents, &c. An analogous process takes place generally in hypnosis. A suggested idea does not remain isolated ; on the contrary, it at once awakens new ideas dependent upon it.

I suggest to A., "Here is a pack of cards." A. believes it. The mental picture of the cards arouses the idea that he is playing a game, and also another idea—that he is at a restaurant with his friends B. and C. The single suggestion of the cards has sufficed to call up a whole scene before A., by association of ideas. A new suggestion suffices to destroy this association at once. I tell A., while he still thinks he is holding the cards, that he is in the train, and the chain of ideas connecting the cards and the restaurant is at once put an end to. However, in many hypnotic subjects a certain rational coherence of ideas persists, so that a suggested idea calls up others in one way or another connected with it. A large number of the phenomena of hypnosis depend upon this principle. Many mentally induced paralyses, of which I spoke on p. 63, also depend upon it ; the idea of a motor paralysis produces anæsthesia, vaso-motor disturbances, &c. I would emphatically say that the fact of their independence of the will has nothing to do with their being an indirect result of suggestion.

This mechanical associative process shows no real mental activity. The mental activity only appears when we destroy the natural associations, and see how the subject exerts himself to create a new sequence of ideas. In the example quoted above I told the subject as I gave him the cards that he was in a train. In order to bring these ideas into some logical connection, the subject A. now explained that he had bought the cards for a birthday present for the friend he was travelling to meet.

The fact that the subject sometimes allows himself to be persuaded to do something, if a reason is given to him for it, shows even more plainly that the thinking process is not always arrested in hypnosis. It is often necessary to suggest a false premiss to the subject before he will do what is wanted. X. cannot be induced to spill a glass of water in my room, but when I tell him that the room is on fire he does it at once.

On the other hand it should be said that even delusions of the senses are sometimes corrected purely by a reasoning process. A subject declines to believe that he sees a wolf in my room; or, rather, he explains that he sees an image of a wolf plainly enough, and could point out the exact spot. But he knows quite well that it must be a delusion, as I should certainly not allow a wolf to come into my sitting-room. Macnish says that people can guard themselves against bad dreams and control them in sleep by a process of thought.

The following very interesting phenomenon which I have observed in the various hypnotic states, even the deepest, demonstrates the activity of the mind in hypnosis. The subjects say they know quite well that the influence exercised upon them is a purely

mental one, even while they obey it. One, in whom all kinds of sense delusions can be induced, said to me, "I know quite well that you do not exercise any extraordinary magnetic faculty; I am sure it is my own imagination which deprives me of my will; my own imagination obliges me to obey you; but I cannot help it."

In a great number of cases the subjects are thrown into hypnosis in this way. Some of them, perhaps, are influenced by their belief in the experimenter's possession of a peculiar magnetic force; on the other hand many are convinced of the subjectivity of the phenomena, and yet are thrown into hypnosis. If it happens that A. is easily hypnotized by B., and with difficulty or not at all by C., this is by no means always because A. believes in B.'s peculiar power; it is rather an indefinite, and at present inexplicable, mental influence which unites A. to B.—an influence which reason often considers imaginary, but which is none the less constraining.

We see this every day in ordinary life, and particularly in love affairs. It happens often that one person is attracted by another and repelled by a third, without being able to discover his reasons for it. Reason often points out the perversity of his inclination; and yet he cannot overcome the strong mental influence which attracts him. *De gustibus non est disputandum;* it is useless to argue about our tastes, because they are not guided by reason, but by certain undefined agencies. To call these feelings sympathies and antipathies explains nothing.

It is particularly interesting, however, to observe how the hypnotic subject makes a logical use of slight external impressions. Few people think of the existence of these impressions, which yet often suffice to put a subject on the right track. Much

apparent "clairvoyance" is a consequence of this heightened faculty for drawing conclusions. Many subjects are helped also by the hyperæsthesia of their organs of sense, which enables them to perceive things ordinarily overlooked. Let us take a very common experiment, often made to prove the existence of animal magnetism. The magnetized subject knows whether he has been touched by his magnetizer or another person. It is astounding to observe the accuracy with which such subjects, when their eyes have been bandaged, can distinguish one person from another. Ochorowicz, who believes in animal magnetism on other grounds, gives a number of interesting examples of this. The hypnotic subject observes the smallest details—the differences in the strength of pressure, in temperature, in the posture of the person touching him, in the sounds he makes with his shirt-cuffs ; nothing is overlooked, and a logically exact conclusion is drawn. Many observations and much information as to the increased acuteness of the mental faculties in the magnetic sleep can be found among the old investigators of mesmerism. Léonard considered this acuteness characteristic of the magnetic state. It may very well happen in such cases that the subject himself is not clearly conscious of drawing his conclusions from these details. This phenomenon is very common in normal life. Suppose a man sees another person for the first time. How often it happens that at first sight he draws a conclusion as to the character of the stranger, and is at the same time unaware of the details from which he draws it. We often divine the meaning of a face without knowing how : we think that it is a stupid or a clever face ; we recognize an expression of happiness or sadness at once, without realizing the details of our impression. Thought

transference, of which I shall speak later, may commonly be referred to this; the subject reads the wish and thought of the experimenter even in a gesture, in the involuntary movement of the lips, in the direction of his eyes (Carpenter), particularly when he has had some hypnotic training in this line.

The prophecies and predictions of somnambules and other such persons often depend upon the logical utilization of such insignificant impressions. A peculiar mental quickness is not always necessary, as is shown in the case of a man who was told by one of these persons that he had lately suffered a severe loss in his family. This was true. The man was astonished at the soothsayer's cleverness, till a friend drew his attention to the fact that he was wearing crape (Fonvielle).

This mental activity, and particularly the mechanical associations described above, show themselves most clearly when suggested ideas are changed. New ideas arise and attach themselves to the dominant one, as I showed above. But it is exactly the quickness with which the subject can be transferred from one situation to another, and with which he accepts the suggested idea, which demonstrates that he is only the plaything of the experimenter. Just as the ideas of dreams transport us in a second from one situation to another, so do suggested ideas. Pleasure is changed into pain in a moment; the moods change as quickly as they usually do only in children. The subject now thinks he is in my room; the next moment he believes he is in bed; directly after he is swimming; now he believes he is ninety years old, and in the next second he is back in his tenth year. Now he is Napoleon I., then a carpenter, then a dog, &c. This change of ideas takes place in a moment;

the corresponding ideas arise at once through association. Few people are able to do this in waking life, even when they have a talent for acting. A certain opposition is sometimes made to this rapid change of ideas in hypnosis, but this is rare. When it happens, the suggestion must be often repeated before the subject will allow himself to be dragged out of his earlier sphere of ideas. The quick change of these dominating ideas is so common that I was astonished to read (in Malten) that a legal specialist in Vienna, Ferroni, has been led by it to conclude that thing is simulation.

This dominant idea, which calls up others, may be looked at in another light. We may say that it is the idea to which the subject's attention is especially turned. In such a case this phenomenon of hypnosis must be regarded as a rapid change in the direction of the attention, caused by the suggestion of the experimenter, and not by the will of the subject. In deep hypnoses the subject's attention is first directed to one point only, *i.e.*, to the experimenter, so that other objects hardly exist for him. When this phenomenon is clearly marked, we speak of *rapport*.

This *rapport* is an important phenomenon of hypnosis. We saw in the fourth experiment (p. 23) that the subject only answered me, and apparently ignored the other persons present. This is the common hypnotic phenomenon called *rapport*. In hypnotic *rapport* the subject responds to the hypnotist only. The old magnetizers were acquainted with this fact, and some investigators on the objective side, particularly Noizet and Bertrand, have tried to explain *rapport*. They thought that the subject fell asleep thinking of the experimenter, and with his

whole attention directed to him, and that on this account only the idea of him remained active in the consciousness during hypnosis. Consequently he alone could make suggestions. As suggestions are most easily made through the muscular sense and the hearing, when *rapport* exists it is made most clearly evident by means of these senses. I lift up the arm of a subject; it remains raised in suggested catalepsy. Another person (A.) makes the same attempt without result; the arm always falls down loosely (*cf.* Experiment IV.). A. now tries to bend the cataleptic arm, but is prevented by its rigid contracture, while I easily succeed. In the same way we have seen (p. 83) that only the hypnotist can obtain apparent reflex contractures by stimulation of the skin. The school of Charcot also maintains that only the hypnotist can relax a continuous contracture in somnambulism by renewed stimulation of the skin. As has been said, this experiment seems to prove that these contractures do not take place without some mental action; for if we had only to do with physical stimuli, any one could produce the same result. All this becomes even clearer in the transference of *rapport*. The command of the experimenter suffices to put A. and B. in *rapport* with the subject. But the stimulus applied by A. and B. before the command is, from a physical point of view, exactly the same as they apply after it; and any explanation of these things is impossible, unless we take refuge in the supposition that some mental action takes place in the production of catalepsy and contractures. The circumstances are analogous in verbal suggestion. The experimenter says when he has lifted the arm, "Now it bends, now it falls, now it is stretched out," and the effect at once follows. The commands of

others are thrown away if they have not been put in *rapport* with the subject by the experimenter. Phenomena like those of *rapport* in hypnosis have been observed in spontaneous somnambulism (Macario).

From all the phenomena hitherto discussed it must have been gathered that there can be no question of loss of consciousness in hypnosis. Of course I mean loss of consciousness as it is understood in psychology.[1] We have seen that the subject in hypnosis remembers the events of earlier hypnoses. Consequently impressions were received into the consciousness in these earlier hypnoses. We cannot, therefore, talk of loss of consciousness because loss of memory exists after the awakening (Forel), apart from the fact that suggestion in hypnosis will prevent the loss of memory. This temporary loss of memory is an every-day occurrence, and we could not conclude a loss of consciousness from it in ordinary life.

I will not speak of the daily mechanical actions we perform without attention and forget directly. I will take quite another case, in which we act with full consciousness and attention. I will choose an example out of my own experience, a thing which we have all doubtless observed in ourselves. I take a book and put it in a particular place, so that I may find it when I want it. At last I want it, but I cannot remember where I put it. I think in vain. Only when I replace myself in imagination at the moment when I put it away (a method which every one knows) do I remember where it is. And yet, in spite of temporary

[1] Psychologically, loss of consciousness is a state in which no kind of psychical process takes place; in the penal code abnormalities of consciousness are included under loss of consciousness (Schwartzer, Casper, Liman).

loss of memory, I did not put the book away in a state of loss of consciousness; it was rather that I was at the time in another state of consciousness. This is in many respects analogous to hypnosis, the events of which are remembered only when the subject is again in the same state of consciousness, *i.e.*, in a new hypnosis. Thus, in all these cases, we have not to do with an unconscious state, since all impressions remain in the memory.

But it might be asked, "Are there not perhaps unconscious states in hypnosis?" In my opinion this question only concerns the forms of lethargy, and only the lethargy which Charcot describes as such, and the lethargy which Bernheim calls hysterical, of which I have spoken (p. 37). As concerns the latter, it must be absolutely distinguished from hypnosis; it has nothing to do with the phenomena of hypnosis, and is in any case extremely rare. With Charcot's lethargy the case stands thus: apart from the numerous cases of lethargy here described, and which even the pupils of Charcot admit are associated with movements caused by command, there remain very few cases worthy of consideration. I doubt, however, whether there is the loss of consciousness in these cases which Charcot describes. The cases which I saw in Paris convinced me of the contrary. The quickness with which these lethargic subjects fall into catalepsy when Charcot merely touches their eyelids makes me imagine that these apparently unconscious persons have been attentively waiting for the moment in which they are expected to become cataleptic. Consequently the loss of consciousness seems to me more than questionable. This point is of great importance because Charcot's pupils maintain that the phenomena of the muscles

and nerves in the lethargic state are not induced by suggestion. The experimenters conclude that the state is one of lethargy without having proved it, and it appears from their statements that, when demonstrating this loss of consciousness, they did not absolutely avoid discussion of the experiments in the presence of the subjects. As a matter of course these lose some of their evidential force in consequence.

Even the states mentioned on p. 69, in which no response could be obtained to questions and commands, do not prove loss of consciousness; for—(1) post-hypnotic suggestions could be made, and were effectual, which proves that there was consciousness; (2) these subjects woke directly they were told to do so (Bernheim), which also shows that they were conscious.

This was evidently also the case with Krafft-Ebing's patient. She sat quite still so long as she was left alone. "Like a statue," says Krafft-Ebing, "however long she is watched, there is no play of feature nor other motor trace whatever of a spontaneous mental process." And yet, in my opinion, we cannot say that all expression of consciousness was absent in this subject. The quickness with which she responded to the suggestions of the experimenter, although in other cases she remained passive under exactly the same stimulations of sense, shows that her thoughts were directed to him, though perhaps in a dreamily conscious state, and also that the idea of him was present in her consciousness. However, this was apparently the only mental process in her case.

In my opinion, therefore, we cannot speak of loss of consciousness in hypnosis, and the opinion held by

many that a hypnotized subject is generally unconscious is a mistake; such a loss of consciousness as takes place in fainting is never found in hypnosis.

But though we cannot speak of a loss of consciousness, we must, however, suppose an abnormal state of consciousness; for if some one believes he sees things that are not present, or fails to see things that are present, he is certainly in an abnormal state of consciousness. If a man forty years old believes he is ten years old, his consciousness is certainly abnormal. We find such phenomena continually among the second group of hypnotic subjects; we must consequently here suppose a material abnormality of consciousness. It need hardly be mentioned that the will in these cases is also not intact, since, without normal consciousness, free-will is not conceivable. In the first group of hypnoses the case is rather different. We must conceive these states as involving less power of the external activity of the will,[1] *i.e.*, as a disturbance of the voluntary movements; here there is no other abnormality of the consciousness. The subject knows exactly where he is; he knows what is being done with him; he makes the movements commanded because he cannot help it; his limbs are paralyzed at command. A complete catalepsy may be induced by suggestion, and yet the subject will be fully aware of all that goes on. Some of Hack Tuke's subjects—for example, North, a physiologist in London—have given very interesting information with regard to the interference of the will experienced during the ex-

[1] The activity of the will is of two kinds: (1) the subjective, which can arbitrarily arouse certain ideas, pictures of memory, &c.; (2) the objective, which is shown in the external movements which depend upon the will.

periments, which makes them unable to resist, though otherwise fully conscious.

In spite of this it would be a great mistake to think of the subject as an automaton without a will, set moving only by the experimenter. On the contrary, the will of the subject expresses itself in manifold ways, and this expression of the will presupposes consciousness, since without consciousness there can be no will, at least in the sense in which I here regard it. We will now consider in what ways the will of the subject can express itself. Its expressions may naturally be very complicated, as, though the will is always less powerful, on the other hand it is not abolished.

Often the decreased power of will shows itself merely in slow and lingering movements. In these cases any movement can be made, but the subject takes longer to perform them than he does in normal circumstances. An inexperienced person is easily inclined to overlook these things, and to fail to recognize the hypnosis; he generally thinks the experimenter mistaken in calling this state a hypnosis. Further, it has been already said that in many persons only certain muscles can be controlled by suggestion (p. 61). But in many cases it is necessary to repeat the suggestion often before the result is attained. For example, a subject can lift his arm in spite of the command of the hypnotizer; but repetition of the command ends by making the movement impossible. This is an example of the way resistance expresses itself.

Expressions of the will which spring from the individual character of the patient are of the deepest psychological interest. The more an action is repulsive to his disposition, the stronger is his resistance (Forel).

Habit and education play a large part here; it is generally very difficult to successfully suggest anything that is opposed to the confirmed habits of the subject. For instance, suggestions are made with success to a devout Catholic, but directly the suggestion conflicts with his creed it will not be accepted. The surroundings play a part also. A subject will frequently decline a suggestion that will make him appear ridiculous. A woman whom I easily put into cataleptic postures, and who made suggested movements, could not be induced to put out her tongue at the spectators. In another such case I succeeded, but only after repeated suggestions. The manner of making the suggestion has an influence. In some cases it must be often repeated before it succeeds; other subjects interpret the repetition of the suggestion as a sign of the experimenter's incapacity and of their own ability to resist. Thus it is necessary to take character into account. It is often easier to induce some action by suggesting each separate movement than by suggesting the whole action at once (Bleuler). For example, if the subject is to fetch a book from the table, the movements may be suggested in turn; first the lifting, then the steps, &c. (Bleuler).

It is interesting to observe the way in which resistance is expressed, both in hypnotic and post-hypnotic suggestion. Beaunis has observed that an attack of hysteria is sometimes the answer to a repugnant suggestion. I myself have observed the interesting phenomenon that subjects have asked to be awakened when a suggestion displeased them.

Exactly the same resistance is sometimes offered to a post-hypnotic suggestion. It is possible in such a case that the subject, even in the hypnotic state, will

decline to accept the suggestion. Many carry out only the suggestions to which they have assented (Pierre Janet). Pitres relates an interesting case of a girl who would not allow him to awake her, because he had suggested that on waking she would not be able to speak. She positively declared that she would not wake till he gave up his suggestion. But even when the suggestion is accepted as such, a decided resistance is often expressed during its post-hypnotic execution. This shows itself as often in slow and lingering movements as in a decided refusal to perform the act at all. The more repugnant the action, the more likely is it to be omitted. In order to induce subjects to carry out post-hypnotic suggestions more easily, it is well to choose an external stimulus which will recall the idea of it more and more vividly to the memory. It is suggested to Mr. X. to say "fool" to one of the persons present directly the clock strikes. X. does not do it; the idea occurs to him when the clock strikes, but he declines to carry it out. But if, instead of the striking of the clock, I choose some other more lasting stimulus which keeps the idea alive, I attain the desired result. For instance, the suggestion succeeds if I say to the subject, "You will say 'fool' to that man when you wake and see me rub my hands." When X. wakes I rub my hands, and the idea arises in his mind; he represses it for some time successfully. However, I go on rubbing my hands for more than a minute; X.'s resistance becomes weaker and weaker, and finally the suggestion is executed.

In other cases it is well to suggest a false premiss directly resistance is offered to some suggestion (as I mentioned on p. 161, in discussing mental activity). The order will then be more easily obeyed. I will

choose an example from Liégeois. A subject was to be induced to steal a watch. He refused. But when it was represented to him that the watch was his own, and that he would be only taking it back again, he obeyed the command. Or the subject may be told that the laws are altered, that stealing is no longer punishable, &c.

There are numerous cases of post-hypnotic suggestion where the suggested act is not performed; but the idea, and the impulse to carry it out are so powerful that the subject feels them for long (Forel). The impulse often only subsides when the action is performed or the suggestion withdrawn.

These explanations concern delusions of the senses, as well as movements and actions, though subjects in deep hypnosis often resist delusions of the senses less than movements and actions. However, I have often seen unpleasant and improbable delusions resisted when contrary ones succeeded. This shows the great influence of the consciousness and will; in a great number of cases they triumph over the power of the experimenter. The following is an example. The subject (X.) was forty-one years old. I told him, "You are now thirteen years old." He answered, "No, I am forty-one." But directly after he accepted the suggestion that he was twelve or fourteen years old. However, I failed to make him believe he was thirteen years old; he refused the suggestion. He was superstitious, and disliked the number thirteen. His notion that thirteen was an unlucky number accounted for his resistance; on that account he would not be thirteen years old.

The experimenter may unconsciously increase the resistance merely by the tone in which he speaks. Fontan and Ségard rightly maintain, for example,

that many hypnoses may be continued or put an end to by the tone in which the operator speaks. When we say to a subject, "Try to open your eyes; they are fast closed, you cannot possibly open them," the kind of emphasis may alter the effect. If the emphasis is laid upon "Try to open your eyes," the last part of the suggestion is more easily overcome, and *vice versâ*. Here is an example. I say to a subject, "Try to lift your arm; you cannot," he remains motionless; he is to a certain degree influenced, even though he believes afterwards that he so acted to please me. But if I now add, in as impressive a manner as possible, "Try all you can, try with all your might to move your arm," the subject is all at once able to move. It is just these states which most clearly show the gradual transitions from the lightest stages to the deepest. I raise a man's arm; the arm remains raised so long as I say nothing. Directly I tell him that if he tries to drop his arm he will not succeed, he does it nevertheless, though at first with some stiffness. This shows that the state was not quite a normal one. In this case, as in many others, the subject passively allows his arm to remain as it was fixed, he makes no effort of will either for or against. But the moment I induce him by verbal suggestion to make an effort of will, he does so, and shows that he can exert the will against my orders, even though the hesitating movement plainly shows that he was influenced. It is the same thing with continued movements, which are sometimes made passively without an act of the will, and sometimes cannot be inhibited by the strongest effort of will, as I have explaned above (p. 69).

Many persons temporarily show substantial variations in susceptibility to suggestion. One declares

at one moment that his name is Moll, and does what I command him ; directly after he is himself again, without any certain or apparent cause. He says afterwards that he perceives two opposing wills in himself, and that sometimes one and sometimes the other conquers.

Hypnotic subjects give us another proof that they are conscious to a certain degree, when they tell us they know they are asleep, or in an altered state (Richet, Pierre Janet). This is also clearly shown in ordinary sleep. We are occasionally conscious in dreams that we are asleep and dreaming. Almost all hypnotic subjects of the second group have this consciousness of being asleep, and it is remarkable that when they are asked if they are asleep or awake, they almost always give the right answer. When, as sometimes happens, the awakening is incomplete they also rightly say that they are not quite awake. The continuance of susceptibility to suggestion may then generally be established. I have mentioned that subjects occasionally ask to be awakened when they are uncomfortable in hypnosis, or when an unpleasant suggestion is made to them.

I again lay stress on the fact that many hypnotic subjects are conscious of an ability to resist. I say to X., " You cannot lift your arm ! " " Yes, I can," he answers, and experiment shows that he is right. But the contrary sometimes happens ; the subject often knows exactly the minute when his power to resist is at an end, when he must obey and cannot help himself. X. announces after a time that he is at this point : " Now the hypnosis is deep enough," he says. I say to a person thirty years old, whom I have often hypnotized, " Now you are a little child." The subject replies, " It is not enough yet, you must wait a

little." After a time, when I ask, he says that now he is at the right point. Many people have this feeling of deficient will and increased suggestibility in deep hypnosis ; they often know the moment when a suggestion will succeed and when not.

The consciousness and will of hypnotics may express themselves in other ways, in the case of indeterminate suggestions (*suggestions indeterminées*, as Beaunis calls them). In such suggestions no definite action is commanded, but the subjects are left to choose among a number. Here is a man with a violent bronchial catarrh. I suggest to him in hypnosis to do something or other which will benefit his health. He at once fetches himself some catechu. I tell another to do some foolish action after he wakes. He wakes and blows the lamp out. From this it is to be concluded that the subject was to a certain degree able to reflect.

Although the above examples show that there is no complete loss of will in hypnoses, yet in all of them the will was set in action by some external impulse. Let us consider whether spontaneity, an independent activity of thought and will, may not exist in hypnosis, apart from external impulse. To this question we must answer "yes," so far as the first group of hypnoses is concerned. Only the second group need be considered. Baillif, Obersteiner, and others describe independent hallucinations, arising without external suggestion, in the first group. But the question is complicated by the fact that we are not always able to exclude external stimuli, which also induce many dreams in ordinary sleep. For example, without any suggestion from me, a hypnotized subject jumps up and says he has seen and heard a mad dog. The cause of this is the uninten-

tional creaking of the boots of one of the people present. I had not observed the creaking, but as often as it was repeated the same result followed. The subject misinterpreted an impression of the sense of hearing, which aroused a certain chain of thought in him. I have often observed such phenomena in impressionable and lively persons.

But I have found spontaneous hallucinations and actions in the deepest hypnosis, when no suggestion had been made, and which I was unable to refer to any stimulus of the senses. In particular, any events which had much occupied the subject during the waking state continued to affect him in hypnosis. One of them, for example, related anecdotes which he had heard somewhere else a day or two before. While his mind was full of them no experiments could be made with him; he was as uncomfortable as a diner-out, who only feels at ease when he has got rid of his whole stock of stories. I believe that in this and other such cases we have to do with independent mental activity, because I could never discover any external stimulus. Of course I cannot mathematically prove that these spontaneous actions did not result from some external impulse; for the external impulse might have been an almost imperceptible sound, and even the slight pressure of clothes on the skin may act as a stimulus and induce apparently independent actions in the subject. I do not believe that hypnotic subjects in the deep stage often have independent currents of thought. I have been much impressed by observing the contrary. Durand de Gros has even made a classification of somnambulists into those who act with, and those who act without, spontaneity.

I have hitherto purposely avoided much mention of the transitional forms. But I shall now say something about them, as certain transitional forms are of importance in psychology, and also in discussing the question of simulation, particularly as they are extremely common. A hypnotized man makes all the movements I command him. I say, "Eat this beefsteak," and he performs all the necessary movements with hand and mouth. I say, "Push that dog away," and he makes the appropriate movements of the legs.

And yet we have only here to do with suggested movements, and the subject by no means believes in the reality of the dog or beefsteak, or thinks he sees them. Consequently this case belongs to the first group of hypnoses. There are two ways of judging correctly of these phenomena: firstly, from observation, and secondly, from the later recollections of the subject. As regards the last, the subject says to me directly I have awakened him, "I knew perfectly well there was no dog and no beefsteak; I did not see them; however, I could not help making the movements you commanded, though I knew I must look utterly ridiculous." This is, then, a case of lessened power of the will without loss of consciousness. This will become clearer if we watch the subject during the hypnosis. The movements are not so quick as they would be if produced by a hallucination; they have a clearly marked character of constraint. There is nothing in the expression of the face which points to a hallucination. The subject often laughs at the foolish movements he is making, and makes corresponding remarks; for example, he says, "This is not a beefsteak," and shakes his head. All this plainly proves that it is not a case of sense delusion.

Again in other cases the subject is quite passive, and does everything the experimenter commands without resistance. When a sense delusion is suggested to him he says, "yes"; which is a sign that he is too passive even to accept the suggestion. For instance, when he is told that a tiger is in the room his behaviour is not affected; he does not run away, and is not frightened, but simply answers that he sees the tiger. In this case only the assent was suggested, and not a sense delusion, as the subject's later recollection shows. He says he only said "yes" because it was easier, but that he did not see a tiger.

Although this case is clear, in others there are important difficulties. These may arise from the fact that the movements themselves generate sense delusions. This is a consequence of the known reciprocal relations of movements and ideas. We have already learned that ideas can call up certain movements in waking life as well as in hypnosis. Now we have to show that particular movements may, on the contrary, excite particular mental processes (Dugald Stewart, Gratiolet). I choose first an example from ordinary life: an attitude expressing anger is assumed; a real feeling of anger very often follows, especially if words are also used; it is known that people can talk themselves into a passion. In this case a particular mental state is induced by movements of particular muscles, and especially by speaking. Something exactly like this occurs in hypnosis. The suggestions made through the muscular sense, observed by Braid and Charcot, are founded on this (*suggestions d'attitude*, or *suggestion par attitude*); if a subject's arms are put into the attitude of prayer, the face soon wears an expression of religious devotion.

The following is a favourite experiment of Charcot. If the subject's hand is raised to his mouth as if he were throwing a kiss, he smiles. If the fist is closed and raised in a threatening attitude, he looks angry. Charcot and Richer maintain that the experiment may be reversed. If the muscles used in laughter are stimulated by faradization, so that a laughing expression is induced, the movement of throwing a kiss with the hand follows. If the muscles which produce an angry expression are stimulated, the arm is raised as in anger. But I believe it may be safely said that suggestions of this kind are affairs of hypnotic training.

However, movements may be used with advantage to help the induction of sense delusions, because movements influence the ideas.

I give an imaginary glass of bitter liqueur to a subject. He says that there is no glass of liqueur, and that he has nothing in his hand. Without noticing this objection, I raise his hand to his mouth, that he may drink. He obeys slowly and hesitatingly ; but when his hand reaches his mouth he makes swallowing movements, and the expression of his face shows that he has a disagreeable taste in his mouth. When I ask him what is the matter, he answers that he has an unpleasant taste, as if he had just drunk something bitter. Nevertheless he had been quite sure at first that no liqueur had been given him ; the suggestion took effect during his compulsory movement ; without this movement the result would not have been attained. In another case I make the subject move his fingers as if he were playing the piano, and suggest at the same time that he is playing. He does not believe it, but continues the movement. While he does this the idea of piano-playing

really arises by degrees in his mind, and at last he makes the movements in the firm belief that he is playing the piano. I have often observed that it was easier to induce sense delusions by accompanying movements than by verbal suggestion alone, and I would recommend this as a means of deepening the hypnosis in suitable cases, as I have often employed it successfully myself. It is often impossible to define the exact moment when the sense delusion supervenes; it is impossible, therefore, to decide whether the delusion was really in existence before, or whether it was called up by the compulsory movements. None the less are they a means of obtaining the end.

The influence of speech is especially useful here. If a subject refuses to believe that he is in a certain suggested situation he should be talked to for some time as if he were. Speech controls people more than sense perceptions do. This is a case in point: I tell a subject to look at a beautiful tree; he declines to believe in its existence, and when I ask if he sees it he persistently answers "no." But I make him nod assentingly several times, and the nods gradually induce the assent which he finally utters. The hallucination is at the same time accepted, and all its other phenomena are induced.

Besides this an existing delusion may sometimes be corrected by the subject's consciousness, or rather by his reasoning powers, as I have stated above (p. 161). Although the delusion sometimes disappears more quickly by this means, in other cases it may persist, in spite of the correction made by the reason. If the correction is complete, the delusion will have no results; it will not influence the actions following. And yet the delusion will continue in full force. I ask a man before I hypnotize him, to tell

me of something which in his opinion would never be found in my room. He says he would never believe there was an owl in my room. In hypnosis I make him the post-hypnotic suggestion that there will be an owl in my room. He wakes and says he sees the owl plainly ; it is chained by the foot, and he describes it exactly. Although he knows and says that the owl is only a hallucination, it is so real to him that he hesitates to put his finger on the spot where he imagines it to be.

It is not always easy to recognize the mental state of a hypnotic subject, particularly in suggested sense delusions ; for it is by no means necessary that a sense delusion should dominate the whole consciousness. If in many cases all thought and action is dependent on the delusion, in other cases the effects are less complete. I even believe that most subjects while the delusion lasts retain a dim consciousness that they are in a fictitious situation. For example, I suggest to a subject that he is in a battle and must fight. An imaginary struggle begins at once and he hits at the air. When I suggest that a cloth on the table is an enemy he strikes at this. I suggest that one of the persons present is an enemy, but in continuing the fight the hypnotic takes care not to strike this person. Naturally this looks like simulation, and I was at first inclined to think so myself. However, a repetition of such experiments forced me to conclude that these were real typical hypnoses, in which, in spite of the sense delusions, there was a dim dream-consciousness existing which influenced the actions of the subject. This dim consciousness of his real surroundings prevented the subject from striking a human being, but left him free to hit a cloth. Many may, perhaps, regard this behaviour of

the hypnotic as pure automatism. As we when walking in the street and reading a newspaper automatically avoid knocking against passers-by, so the hypnotic avoids hitting another person, although he is only dimly, or not at all, aware of his existence.

It is the same thing with negative hallucinations. As in the positive delusions a dim perception exists of their being only delusions, so the subject in negative hallucinations really recognizes the object which has been made invisible to him through suggestion ; even though he is unconscious of the recognition. Binet and Féré have said about this : "The object must be recognized, in order not to be perceived." These authors made a series of experiments in support of their assertion, which I have been able to repeat with success, as an example of a negative hallucination. If ten sheets of white paper are taken and one of them marked, the subject can be made to believe that he sees only nine sheets, even when the sheet, whose invisibility was suggested, is among them. If he is asked to give up the nine sheets, he picks out the nine unmarked ones, and leaves the other, guided by the mark. Consequently, he is able to distinguish it from the others, although he is unconscious of making the distinction.

A series of experiments made by Cory are even better. I was able partly to repeat them, and obtained the same results. I took a sheet of paper, and drew a rather irregular line on it. I then suggested to the subject (X.) that the paper was blank. X. agreed that he saw nothing. I then drew fifteen straight lines on the paper and asked X. what he saw. He said, "Fifteen lines." I recommenced the experiment, but made the first line straight, and then suggested its invisibility ; upon which I added twenty

more lines exactly like it and made X. count them. "There are twenty-one," he said. Therefore the line suggested as absent was only invisible to X. when he could distinguish it from the others. The following experiment resembles this: I took a match and marked its end with a spot of ink. I then suggested that the match was invisible. I took twenty-nine other matches and put the whole thirty on the table in such a manner that X. could see the ink spot. To my question X. replied that there were only twenty-nine matches on the table. I then, while X.'s eyes were turned away, moved the marked match so that X. could not see the spot. He looked at the matches and said there were thirty of them. Thus the marked match was only invisible so long as X. could distinguish it from the others.

From these and other such experiments it may be concluded that the subject recognizes the object of a negative hallucination, and that it produces a central impression, even though there is no perception of it. The automatic writing, of which I shall speak further on, demonstrates this (Pierre Janet). Numerous experiments in this direction, which I have made in company with Sellin and Max Dessoir, also confirm it. I shall not give them in detail, as this would take me too long. The results of the negative hallucination depend upon the strength of this central impression. If the central impression is very slight, then the result will be the same as if the object causing it did not exist. But if a certain dim consciousness of the presence of the object exists (and this is usually the case), then it may influence the actions of the subject in spite of suggestion to the contrary. I suggest to a subject that a table, which was between him and the door, is no longer there; the subject

goes to the door, but carefully avoids hitting against the table. I suggest that the electrode, which is armed with the very painful faradic brush, is invisible. After closing the current I touch the subject with the brush and he shows great pain. When I ask what has hurt him, he says he does not know, for my hand is empty; but at the same time he takes care not to touch the place where the brush is lying, or does it hesitatingly, and with evident signs of fear. I tell another that I am going out of the room; he apparently neither sees nor hears me. Yet every suggestion that I now make to him is executed. I order him to take the cushion from the sofa and throw it on the floor. The order is obeyed though after some hesitation. To another, who also believes by suggestion that I am out of the room, I suggest sense delusions—the presence of a dog, &c. All the suggestions succeed, evidently because the subject hears what I say, though he believes me absent. I tell another, "Now you are deaf." Upon which he ceases to do what I tell him. But after I have several times repeated, "Now you can hear again," he obeys every command. We see in these cases, which I could multiply, that the organs of sense act normally, that a certain effect is produced, but that the impressions are not received into clear consciousness. I naturally do not maintain that this is the case in all positive or negative hallucinations; on the contrary, in some the delusion is complete. This depends on character, and to a great extent on the manner in which the suggestion is made. I wished merely to describe the more incomplete and by far most common cases, because they are often ascribed to simulation, and till now have never been seriously considered.

All the phenomena of which I have spoken hitherto are very variable. I have purposely only mentioned the most common and most important, lest my work should grow too long. But hypnotic education or training needs a particular discussion. I would ask every one who watches hypnotic experiments to give it particular attention. All the phenomena of hypnosis may be interpreted falsely by a mere spectator if sufficient attention is not paid to this point. When hypnotic experiments are shown to outsiders, subjects are as a rule selected who have gone through a hypnotic training in some particular direction, and as the directions are various, the results also are various. The experimenter A. keeps in view a particular symptom, *a*, and reinforces it at each experiment; in the same way experimenter B. cultivates symptom *b*. In the first case *a* is fully developed and *b* receives little attention; and in the second case the reverse happens. The Breslau investigators, for example, developed the imitative movements, while others did the same with the effects of the movements on the feelings (*suggestions d'attitude*)

He who only regards the final results and pays no attention to their gradual evolution will be inclined to believe that the two parties of investigators are engaged with different things; though it is in reality only difference in training which gives a different appearance to identical states. Each experimenter now only demonstrates such symptoms as he has cultivated by training, especially as this training commonly produces most interesting phenomena; the heightening of certain faculties in particular. The outsider is unaware that this is a mere result of hypnotic training, and is easily misled. Children who repeat to strangers the piece of poetry they know

best, do exactly the same thing. Experimenters produce certain objective symptoms by means of training, and any one seeing them for the first time is apt to make mistakes. But every experimenter produces different objective symptoms—one, for example, a lasting catalepsy, another a perfect *écholalie*. These things strike the stranger, who cannot estimate the effect of training. Thus it happens that different experimenters discover different objective symptoms. The question of training is of immense importance. Many have suspected simulation because of the apparent variety of hypnotic states. This variety is really only the result of different training, if we put aside differences of character. The experimenter influences the development of the hypnosis (Delbœuf, Jendrássik). Unimportant phenomena such as *écholalie* are developed as much as possible and are at last wrongly considered to be essential hypnotic phenomena.

Training is the great source of error for the experimenter in hypnotism, because the subject is inclined to divine and obey his intentions, and thus unconsciously misleads him. Unknown to himself, the tone of his voice may induce the subject to present the phenomena which he expects. The subject is also greatly influenced by his surroundings, and by watching other subjects (Bertrand). Imitation is also of great importance here. I hypnotize X., and suggest that he cannot speak, at the same time inadvertently touching his left shoulder with my right hand. Y., in hypnosis, sees this, and every time I touch his left shoulder with my right hand he, too, is unable to speak. Y. believes that this is the signal for loss of speech, and behaves accordingly. Training enables a hypnotic subject to divine all the experi-

menter's wishes. The latter need not speak ; the least movement betrays his wish. A long training is not necessary ; Delbœuf artificially induced the stages of Charcot in one of his own subjects in a few hours. My object in making these remarks is to warn against attributing great importance to demonstrations, particularly when these offer certain symptoms apparently objective and impossible to imitate. It should always be kept in mind that many such symptoms can be produced by training ; and can, perhaps, be imitated by practice even without hypnosis.

Hitherto I have used the word "training" only for the artificial cultivation of certain symptoms ; but it also means the production of such particular modifications of hypnosis, as are seen after frequent repetition of the state.

As has been said already, it is sometimes necessary to make several attempts before the hypnosis appears. Husson, in 1831, said this with regard to the magnetic sleep. It may be very long before hypnosis is produced. Sometimes deep hypnosis only ensues after a process of training by several sittings. In one case which I have seen hypnosis with sense delusions only resulted after eighty attempts, though lighter states had been earlier attained. Training not only makes the hypnosis deeper, but makes it appear more quickly. But, undoubtedly, a deep hypnosis may occasionally be induced at a first attempt; and Forel is right when he warns against exaggeration on this point. One of my relations fell into so deep a hypnosis in a minute on a first trial, that I could at once induce post-hypnotic negative hallucinations. And this person is a perfect specimen of a healthy young man.

But in most cases it is necessary, as I have said, to give the subject a hypnotic training, in order t make

the state as deep as possible. For this I wish to recommend a particular method, as otherwise the deepening is not always attained. Let the first suggestions be simple, so as not to shock the subject's sense of probability. The first suggestions should be possible, and progress should be gradual. More will be attained in this way than by suggesting impossible situations at first which the subject will not believe in. And if a suggestion is often declined, there is apt to arise in the subject the auto-suggestion that he is refractory to this suggestion, or perhaps to any suggestion. This is often lastingly prejudicial, and may lessen susceptibility to suggestion in all later hypnoses. I therefore strongly recommend a slow and gradually increasing method for post-hypnotic suggestion. Perhaps Binswanger's experiments in post-hypnotic suggestion failed because he overlooked this point. A man is in the hypnotic state. I suggest that when he wakes he shall call me an insulting name; he does not do it, but is perfectly ready to carry out another post-hypnotic suggestion; for instance, to tell me that he is quite well. Here there is only a slight degree of suggestibility at first, but it is quite possible by frequent repetition and slow increase to get much more complicated suggestions carried out.

This concludes the symptoms of hypnosis. I believe I have given a sufficient sketch of its essential phenomena in the foregoing pages. In the following chapters I shall refer again to the importance of some of them. We have seen that the symptoms are of manifold kinds, and I may add that they are hardly ever identical in two different persons. In spite of conformity to law one human body is never exactly

like another, the mental state of one man is never exactly like another's. It is the same in hypnosis: one man displays this symptom with greater clearness, another that. We shall never be able to find a subject in whom all the symptoms are united, just as we cannot find a patient who has all the symptoms of an illness as they are theoretically described.

CHAPTER IV.

COGNATE STATES.

WE always try to advance the study of a state which has hitherto been little known and examined, by comparing it with other states, with whose symptoms we are better acquainted. We will therefore try to find points of correspondence with hypnosis.

The cognate states might be considered later, after we had discussed hypnotism in general, and its theory in particular. But as I shall then have to return to certain points which must be discussed in speaking of the cognate states, I prefer to sketch these first. The name selected by Braid shows that there is a resemblance between sleep (*hypnos*) and hypnotism; and the Nancy investigators, Liébeault, Bernheim, Brullard, as well as Forel, of Zürich, consider hypnosis an ordinary sleep; they think that a person who falls asleep spontaneously is in *rapport* with himself, while a hypnotized subject is in *rapport* with the person who hypnotized him; in their view this is the chief difference between sleep and hypnosis.

I believe, however, that we cannot so easily agree to an identification of the states. We must begin by distinguishing the light and deep hypnoses. We see that in the light hypnosis there is merely an inhibition of the will, which affects the movements; the memory is not at all affected. Now we always presuppose a

great decrease of self-consciousness in sleep. But it is just this self-consciousness which remains intact in light hypnosis; and in this state the subject is perfectly aware of all that goes on, and, as a rule, forgets nothing on waking. Consequently I do not think we can make a close comparison between sleep and hypnosis; nor do I think it possible to make a fruitful comparison between these light hypnoses and the states of drowsiness and fatigue which precede sleep. In any case we have seen that a feeling of fatigue is not uncommon in these hypnotic states. Besides which we have also seen that the loss of voluntary muscular movement is one of their chief phenomena. There is hardly a hint of this in the drowsy state; there is only a general fatigue of the muscles and heaviness in the limbs. In spite of this the sleepy person can move as he pleases; at the most he only feels dull, but the lessened power of the will shown in hypnosis is entirely wanting.

Further, these light hypnotic states are distinguished from the early stages of sleep by the decreased activity of consciousness in these latter. The current of the ideas, of images of memory, &c., is less under the control of the will, while in the light hypnotic states only the voluntary movements suffer change. In the early stages of sleep sense impressions do not develop into conscious ideas in the usual way; much that generally excites our interest and attention is overlooked, while there is often reverie independent of the will. But almost all this is entirely absent in the light hypnotic states.

On this account I here protest against a terminology, which has been to a great extent adopted, and which many doctors have helped to propagate, but which is none the less erroneous. For example,

it is often said that hypnotized persons are "asleep," and the two states have been partly identified. I think this a misuse of words, since, as has been explained, there are a whole series of hypnotic states in which not one symptom of sleep appears, and mistaken conclusions are often drawn from the mistaken terminology, with resulting confusion.

The case in deep hypnosis is essentially different. It is characterized by numerous sense delusions, which, however, are just the same thing as our nightly dreams. In order to carry out the comparison, it will perhaps be well to consider the mode of origin of dreams in ordinary sleep. Dreams are divided into two classes, according to the manner of their origin (Spitta): (1) dreams induced by nerve stimulation, and (2) dreams induced by association of ideas. The first—by far the most numerous—are induced by a peripheral stimulus of the nerves, affecting the brain. Here the nerve stimulus is certainly felt; a memory picture arises, and a perception results. This picture does not, however, correspond to the actual stimulus, which could only be accurately estimated by full waking attention.

It is difficult to say what memory picture will be aroused and what dream will result, as it depends upon several factors which as yet escape our observation. Scherner's numerous attempts to explain this are not very convincing. The memory picture aroused by a stimulus in the manner sketched above attaches itself in a number of cases to a previously existing dream. "When an orator dreams he is making a speech, he takes every noise for the applause of his imaginary hearers" (Walter Scott).

Dreams can be artificially called up by nerve stimulation. If a sleeping man is sprinkled with

water he will dream of a shower of rain (Leixner). Maury has made a number of experiments on himself during sleep. When Eau de Cologne was held to his nose he dreamed that he was in Farina's shop at Cairo. Preyer, Prevost, Hervey, and many others have published such experiments.

The second kind of dreams are dreams from association of ideas; they are supposed to follow on a primary central act. The memory picture is supposed to be caused by some primary central activity, and not by a peripheral stimulus. Between these two classes of dreams there is another which I may call suggested dreams. In these no stimulus is applied to the nerves of the subject which he may work out according to his fancy; but a dream is suggested to him verbally (Reil, Maury, Max Simon). An acquaintance of mine told his daughter that she saw rooks, upon which she dreamed of them and related her dream on waking. On other occasions the attempt failed.

It would seem that certain stages of sleep are fitter for this than others. Delbœuf believes that the transitional stage between sleeping and waking is the best. He even supposes that many nervous and mental disorders originate from natural suggestion made at this time, and that they develop themselves like post-hypnotic suggestions. As regards the mode of origin, these suggested dreams are identical with the suggested sense delusions of hypnosis.

But the mode of origin of other dreams in sleep does not differ essentially from their mode of origin in hypnosis. This is particularly clear when we compare the hallucinations induced by nerve stimulation mentioned on p. 178 with them; these hallucinations are identical with dreams induced by

nerve stimulation. Here is an example. I hypnotize a person, and blow with the bellows close to him, without speaking. The blowing causes a central excitation, and the subject believes he hears a steam engine. He dreams he sees a train; he believes he is at the railway station at Schöneberg, &c. This is exactly the same thing as a dream produced by nerve stimulation, in which the falling of a chair makes the dreamer think he hears a gun fired, and is in a battle. Besides, in hypnosis as well as in sleep such stimuli are enormously over-estimated by the consciousness; a slight noise is taken for the sound of a gun, and a touch on the hand for the bite of a dog. I have made many such suggestions in hypnosis. I drum upon the table, without speaking; the subject hears, and dreams of military music, and that he is in the street, and sees soldiers, &c. What dream will be induced by the peripheral stimulus, and what memory picture will be aroused, either in sleep or in hypnosis, depends upon the character of the subject. One thing is clear from the comparisons I have made: it is a mistake to think, as many do, that no intercourse with the outside world takes place in sleep. The opinion that by far the greater number of dreams are induced by sense stimuli gains more and more adherents (Wundt). This receptivity to stimuli which reach the brain, unregulated by the consciousness, and mistakenly interpreted, is a phenomenon of both sleep and hypnosis.

It is evident from what has been said that the method employed to make external suggestion in hypnosis often suffices to induce dreams in sleep. At the most there is only a quantitative difference, since most sense delusions are directly suggested in hypnosis, while in sleep dreams are caused by some

peripheral stimulus, which undergoes a special elaboration in the brain of the sleeper.

The purport of dreams, as well as the way they originate, is alike in sleep and hypnosis. It is naturally impossible to go into details. But as in sleep we believe ourselves in another situation, and encounter all sorts of sense delusions, so also in hypnosis. And as a subject in hypnosis can be replaced in earlier periods of his life, so in dreams also. Many habitually dream that they are again undergoing the final examination at college many years after. Complete changes of personality also take place in dreams. An officer who greatly admired Hannibal, told me that he had dreamed he was Hannibal, and had fought an imaginary battle in that character. Another man was even less modest; he dreamed that he was God, and was governing the world.

We cannot decide whether there is more dreaming in hypnosis than in sleep, because we can never know how many dreams happen in sleep. While some say that dreams only occur during a short period of sleep, others, like Kant, Forel, Exner, and Simonin go so far as to deny that there is any sleep without dreaming; they say that dreaming is continuous, but that most dreams are forgotten.

As we find that the origin and purport of dreams are the same in sleep and hypnosis, it follows that in all probability the dreams of hypnosis are no more injurious to health than the dreams of sleep.

In spite of all this, we can find a difference between the phenomena of deep hypnosis and of sleep in several points—(1) in the apparently logical connection between the suggested idea and the hypnotic subject's own thoughts; (2) in the movements of the

subject, and particularly in his speech, since there may be a conversation between experimenter and subject (Wernich).

With regard to the first point, we have seen (p. 161) that a series of ideas sometimes link themselves logically to another particular idea. Consequently the difference from sleep is only apparent. As long as the suggested idea prevails in hypnosis, other ideas will often link themselves logically to it. This linking is, however, on the whole, merely mechanical, the result of habitual association of ideas. This logical connection can be broken at any moment with the greatest ease by suggestion, as I have shown; in the same way the whole current of ideas may change at any moment. It at once appears from this that the consciousness is unable to unite the ideas actively, as the smallest external influence suffices to tear them asunder at once. The logical connection mentioned above lasts only as long as the experimenter permits. Those cases in which the dream-consciousness carries on some planned mental work show that there may be a logical connection with the dominant idea even in dreams.

I will not go into details of examples. It is known that Voltaire wrote poetry in sleep, that mathematicians sometimes solve problems when asleep, and that the well-known physiologist, Burdach, worked out many scientific ideas in sleep. Maury has also pointed out that apparently disconnected dream-ideas are yet related to each other by certain associations.

I mentioned the movements in hypnosis as a further apparent contrast between this state and sleep. But this assuredly forms no qualitative distinction, since it is known that people move in sleep (Hans Virchow). The activity of the muscles in

sleep is often an automatic continuation of movements begun awake. This happens with people who fall asleep in making one particular movement; they continue the movement in sleep. Coachmen will go on driving, and riders will hold the bridle without falling off: here the movement begun has made an unconscious impression strong enough to make the muscular movement go on. Birds also go to sleep standing.

In all these cases the muscular action is very like the contractures and automatic movements described on p. 69. Besides this, certain external stimuli may cause movements during sleep. It seems probable to me that they do not happen without consciousness. If part of a sleeper's body is uncovered, he will draw the cover over it; if he is tickled, he will rub the place. Even if these are regarded as physical reflexes without any accompanying mental action, which is not proved, the case is essentially different with the movements which children make in sleep, at command. If a child is told to turn over, he will do it without waking (Ewald). This is an act which, as Ewald remarks, may fairly be compared with the phenomena of hypnosis, in which movements the same in kind, if greater in extent, are made at command. It shows how movements may be caused in sleep by external mental stimuli. These movements become plainer when they are not called up directly, but are purely the consequence of a dream. Dreams often cause movements. Many persons, particularly children, laugh in pleasant dreams. The same sort of thing has often been observed. A lady I know dreamed that she was blowing out a lamp; she made the corresponding movements with her mouth. She was awakened,

and related the dream which had no doubt caused the movements of the mouth. Every one knows that children in especial often scream when they are dreaming.

The persons we call somnambulists (sleep-walkers, night-walkers) show these movements, which are characteristic. The resemblance between hypnotism and somnambulism is so great that the name somnambulism is used for both (Richet). Hypnotism is called artificial somnambulism, and the other natural somnambulism, or, better, spontaneous somnambulism, since artificial somnambulism is really as natural as the other, as Poincelot insists. All sorts of movements are made in spontaneous somnambulism. Three stages are generally distinguished—(1) that in which the sleeper speaks; (2) that in which he makes all sorts of movements but does not leave his bed; (3) that in which he gets up, walks about, and performs the most complicated actions. In my experience the first two stages are found in persons of sanguine temperament who are decidedly not in a pathological condition. It is not yet finally decided whether the third state appears under pathological conditions only. From my own experience I am inclined to think that it is occasionally observed when there is no constitutional weakness, especially in children. If we want to show these states, we can do it with the healthiest subjects. As regards these movements in sleep, my own experience is that the persons who are most restless in natural sleep, who talk, or throw themselves about, are the most inclined to lively movement in hypnosis. In any case the movements are also displayed in sleep. I think we ought to call the last states sleep, especially the two first stages of somnambulism.

Consequently the movements of subjects in hypnosis do not offer a fundamental contrast to sleep, especially when they are caused by suggested delusions of sense.

The fact that a subject in hypnosis can carry on a conversation is not enough to mark off hypnosis from sleep, as Werner erroneously supposes ; for many persons answer questions and obey commands in sleep (Lotze). According to my experience, and that of others, certain persons easily answer in sleep when some one they know well speaks to them. A child will speak to its mother, and bedfellows to one another. A conversation is easily carried on when the waking person follows the sleeper's chain of thought and insinuates himself, so to speak, into his consciousness (Brandis). A lady I know dreamed aloud of a person (X.), and when her husband talked to her as if he were X. he was answered, but when he spoke in his own person he was ignored.

Finally, there are many persons who can hardly be induced to move in hypnosis, though they can be made to dream anything.

I hope that what has been said makes it clear that hypnosis by no means needs to be sharply distinguished from sleep, in spite of its apparent differences. To my mind the dividing line between sleep and hypnosis is merely a quantitative difference in the movements. Movements in hypnosis are easily induced ; in sleep they are duller, slower, and rarer. The resemblance of the two states goes still further.

Even post-hypnotic suggestion finds an analogy in sleep (Liébeault). Of course the effect of dreams upon the organism is not so easy to observe as the effect of suggestion, as most dreams are forgotten. However, I will mention some of these analogous

cases. People who dream of a shot, and wake in consequence, continue to hear the reverberation clearly after they wake (Max Simon). Others after waking feel a pain of which they have been dreaming (Charpignon). I will merely mention certain phenomena which resemble these—the dreams which are continued into waking life, which may be compared to continuative post-hypnotic suggestions. There are well-known vivid dream-pictures which are not recognized as dreams, and which are taken for reality even after waking (Brierre de Boismont). It is certain that even the most enlightened persons are influenced by dreams. Many are out of humour the whole day after having been annoyed by unpleasant dreams. The experiments lately made by Friedrich Heerwagen, of Dorpat, have proved that persons who have dreamt much are in an unpleasant frame of mind the next day. I know patients who are much worse after dreaming of their complaints; a stammerer will stammer more after dreaming about it. We find analogies with post-hypnotic suggestion everywhere. There are well-known cases in which persons have dreamed of taking an aperient, with effect.

Perhaps a case mentioned by Féré may be referred to here. A girl dreamed for several nights that men were running after her. She grew daily more exhausted, and the weakness in her legs increased till a hysterical paraplegia of both legs declared itself. In mental diseases doctors have often mentioned an analogous phenomenon; they say that the earliest signs of mental disorder show themselves first in dream. Griesinger says that delirium often begins in dream. Esquirol says that in acute mania it has been observed that the patient thinks he is

ordered in a dream to do something. This is certainly analogous to post-hypnotic suggestion. Tonnini mentions a rather inconclusive case of a woman who was induced by a dream to do something. Of course such cases are difficult to observe; but it is very probable that dreams have an after-effect on even thoroughly healthy people. Aristotle maintained long ago that many of our actions had their origin in dreams.

The similarity of the means used to induce sleep and hypnosis is often insisted upon as a proof of their identity. But a distinction must be made. It is said that monotonous stimuli induce both sleep and hypnosis. Purkinje, therefore, thought that Braid's methods would also produce sleep. But we should never conclude an identity of states from the identity of their causes. We should observe whether the symptoms are identical. To decide the question, we should ask, Is the subject who is sent to sleep by monotonous sense stimulation without a primary mental act susceptible to suggestion or not? I have seen cases in which the subjects fixed their gaze but did not concentrate their attention. The subsequent state was an ordinary sleep, out of which the subjects awoke when I made verbal suggestions to them, however softly I spoke. It is the same thing when we wish to decide whether a tedious speaker hypnotizes his audience. Many people grow sleepy, or even fall asleep, in such a case. Unluckily it would be hardly practicable to make a suggestion to a man who had fallen asleep under such conditions, and yet this would be the only way to decide whether he was hypnotized or not. But sleep comes on without concentration of the subject's thoughts. If he concentrates his thoughts on the orator, he will not go to sleep; in

this case his state of partially strained attention much resembles hypnosis. If the state is strongly marked, negative hallucinations may arise (for instance, with regard to noises), as in hypnosis. I know several cases of this kind. I am also in doubt whether those states of loss or disturbance of consciousness, induced by vertigo, *e.g.*, by spinning round quickly, should be reckoned as hypnoses. Erdmann has identified the states induced by vertigo and by tedium in his well-known ingenious manner. But I must repeat that it does not matter how the states are produced; the point is whether their symptoms are alike. This must always be considered, and I direct attention to it again, although in discussing the symptoms I mentioned excitation of the muscular sense such as takes place in spinning round and round as a hypnogenetic method. So much for the resemblance between sleep and hypnosis.

Hypnosis has been often compared to mental disorder as well as to sleep. Rieger and Semal, as well as Hack Tuke (so far back as 1865), called hypnosis an artificially induced mental disorder. In the first place I would remark that it is of no consequence what hypnosis is called. Even in therapeutics this is a matter of no moment. Suppose the use of morphia were denounced because morphia is a poison, and because the sleep induced by morphia is an effect of poisoning. As Rieger justly says, we need not trouble ourselves about names. We might call hypnosis a mental disorder if we also regarded sleep and dreams as such. And we find that when doctors in psychological practice wish to discover analogies to mental disorder, they always have recourse to dreams. This resemblance has

struck many observers, but no author has maintained that in order to lose one's sanity it is only necessary to go to sleep.

The most different mental disorders have been compared to hypnosis, which shows what confusion there is about it. For example, Rieger and Konrád say that hypnosis is nothing but an artificial madness. Meynert maintains that it is an experimentally-produced imbecility. Luys compares it to general paralysis of the insane, and others to *melancholia attonita*. These different comparisons show the want of unanimity among authors, for the forms of mental disorder we call imbecility and mania are as unlike as a pea and a rose, which are both plants, but of utterly different kinds. No two states of mental disorder could be more unlike than imbecility and mania.

When hypnosis is thus compared to mental disorder it is generally forgotten that susceptibility to suggestion is the chief phenomenon of hypnosis. But it is a mistake to think that susceptibility to suggestion is an essential phenomenon of mental disorder; if it were, mental disorders could be cured by suggestion, which is hardly ever possible. Suggestibility is a symptom of sleep, and we have seen that the dreams which follow on stimulation of the nerves may be induced by suggestion. By means of suggestion in hypnosis forms of hypnosis may be induced which resemble mental derangement, *i.e.*, spontaneous mania, or *melancholia attonita*, besides forms of imbecility, &c. But we can also induce paralysis and stammering by suggestion, and yet hypnosis is not a state of paralysis or of stammering. We can suggest pain in hypnosis, yet hypnosis is not a state of pain. And how the light stages of hypnosis, in which only certain

motor effects are caused by suggestion, can be called states of mental disorder is not clear to me, unless a person is to be called mentally unsound simply because he cannot open his eyes. But even the susceptibility to suggestion which exists in such mental disorders as delirium tremens (Möli, Pierre Janet), or the Katatonie of Kahlbaum (Jensen), must not be without further ceremony identified with the susceptibility we find in hypnosis. I need only say "Wake!" to the hypnotized subject, and the state ends; but there is no disease which can be guided and ended at a moment's notice like hypnosis.

Of course no author would call hypnosis a mental disorder merely because it may be occasionally a delusion in insanity. Freud is right when he says that meat does not lose its flavour when an enthusiastic vegetarian calls it carrion; why should a mental influence, such as we have found hypnosis to be, lose its value or interest because it is sometimes called mental disease?

A remark of Griesinger shows how capriciously all such terms are used; he thinks a somnambulism of short duration is a sleep, and a longer one a mental disorder.

It is no new thing to see hypnosis brought into connection with hysteria and regarded as an artificial hysteria or neurosis. Demarquay and Giraud-Teulon have pointed out analogies, and Charcot has lately called his three stages a "*grande névrose hypnotique.*" Dumontpallier also thinks that hypnosis is an experimental neurosis. I would make the same remark upon this as upon the mental disorders. Charcot has called up the complete type of a neurosis, and specially of hysteria, by suggestion. This was comparatively easy in his cases of "*grande hystérie*," because

phenomena which are common in the subject in waking life are more easily induced in hypnosis than others (Grasset). I repeat, it would be easy to suggest stammering in hypnosis, and then draw the conclusion that hypnosis is a state of stammering. Besides, Charcot has never maintained that the states, as they exist apart from his three stages, and as they have been observed by the school of Nancy, are neuroses; on the contrary, he expressly excludes them from neuroses.

Other states have also been occasionally compared to hypnosis. I may mention catalepsy, a disease, or symptom of disease, in which the limbs keep any given position; and lethargy, a strange state of sleep, in which artificial awakening is difficult or impossible, and to which a disease called *hypnosia* or sleeping sickness, observed in the negroes of West Africa, appears to be related. Thomsen's disease, in which a contracture follows voluntary movement, is also compared to hypnosis, and so are epileptic disturbances of consciousness. I pass over the phenomena of intoxication by alcohol, chloroform, ether, opium, and particularly haschisch, which are often compared to hypnosis on account of the delusions of sense which occur in them. Narcolepsy must also be mentioned. In this disease there are periodical attacks of sleepiness. It has been described by Gélineau, Rousseau, Ballet, and others. Certain cases of what Drosdow calls *Morbus Hypnoticus*, whose resemblance to hypnosis is unmistakable, may be included in this tolerably undefined narcolepsy. These states might be regarded as auto-hypnoses. Vizioli has published an account of an auto-hypnosis, in which he succeeded in making even post-hypnotic suggestions to the subject. Naturally, the terminology is very arbitrary in these cases; these states might

be ascribed to spontaneous somnambulism arising directly out of waking life, and not in sleep, as usual. The famous case of Motet, which was so important from the legal point of view, would then belong to this class. A man committed a criminal act in a state of self-induced hypnosis, to which he was subject. On Motet's recommendation he was acquitted. A case of Dufay's is nearly identical. It would be extremely illogical, besides, to call hypnosis a morbid state merely because a morbid imitation of it is to be found in many forms of *Morbus Hypnoticus*. It would be as great a mistake as if we were to take yawning for a disease because there are people who suffer from attacks of yawning, and who yawn to an abnormal degree (Ochorowicz). *Lata* often resembles hypnosis (Bastian, O'Brien, Forbes). The word *Lata* properly means the sufferers from this complaint, not the disease. The disease is found among the Malays; the patient imitates every movement made in his presence, as in "fascination." The same thing has been seen in Maine among the "Jumpers" (Beard), and in Siberia, where the sufferers are called "*Miryachit*" (Hammond).

Once more, the chief feature of hypnosis is increased susceptibility to suggestion. By means of this we can induce counterfeits of all sorts of diseases, which appear identical with the real thing. But none the less, hypnosis should not be identified with these diseases. The two characteristics of hypnosis are suggestibility and the power of ending the state at pleasure. We do not find them united in mental disorders, nor in neuroses; but we find them in sleep, in which suggestion induces dreams by means of stimulation of the senses, and from which the subject can be aroused at any moment by an external stimulus. Although no

identification of hypnosis and sleep would be justifiable on the above grounds, I must again point out that, in spite of their apparent differences, they are closely related, at least so far as hypnoses of the second group are concerned.

The different phenomena of hypnosis have been also observed in normal waking life, and this makes a comparison of the hypnotic states with other abnormal states considerably more difficult. For example, a symptom which A. shows in hypnosis he does not show in his normal state; but it may be observed in B.'s normal waking life. This may be referred to the phenomena of suggestion, which exist normally, as I showed on p. 57, but which are increased in certain cases during hypnosis. People differ greatly in their susceptibility to suggestion in waking life; I have spoken (p. 57) of suggestions in ordinary life, from which hypnosis cannot be concluded. Besides which a number of phenomena of suggestion, which are generally regarded as a peculiarity of hypnosis, have been found in waking life. Braid, the American electrobiologists, Heidenhain, Berger, Richet, Lévy, Bernheim, Beaunis, Liégeois, and Forel, may be mentioned among those who have made observations in this field.

These phenomena are shown by subjects who have been hypnotized as well as by those who have not. Contractures, paralyses, dumbness, and all kinds of motor disturbances can be induced by suggestion in the waking state. According to some authors it is even possible to induce hallucinations without hypnosis. However, many of the experiments, and particularly the conclusions drawn from them, seem to me to have two defects. Those who talk of sugges-

tions in the waking state (*suggestions à veille*) forget, first, that sleep is by no means always indispensable for many hypnotic suggestions. Authors often confuse hypnosis with sleep in speaking of suggestions in the waking state. We have seen that the light hypnotic stages do not much resemble sleep; consequently we must not conclude that a state of contracture, &c., is, or is not, a hypnosis because it resembles sleep or not. The second point which these authors generally overlook is this: they think that hypnosis is excluded in these cases of waking suggestion, because none of the usual methods of inducing hypnosis have been used. But the methods are not absolutely necessary for the induction of hypnosis. We cannot make the question, whether hypnosis is present or not, depend on the means employed. If we refused to believe in any particular state unless the usual means had been used to induce it, we should revolutionize science. In my opinion we ought to consider the state and its symptoms separately. For if we take a certain degree of suggestibility, loss of memory, &c., for a symptom of hypnosis, nothing remains but to regard as hypnoses many—I will not say all—of these states which are generally described as suggestions without hypnosis. The chief phenomenon of hypnosis is that a certain accepted idea leads to a movement or a delusion of the senses, &c. We have further seen that the experimenter can change the subject's dominant idea very quickly, *i.e.*, he can suggest one thing quickly after another. If, then, we can do the same thing without any previous appearance of hypnosis, we must call the state a hypnosis all the same, particularly if there is subsequent loss of memory, which is generally the case in delusions of the senses. There has been a kind of hypnosis in both cases.

Thoroughly concentrated attention is not absolutely necessary to induce hypnosis; a partial concentration is enough. In these experiments there is generally partial concentration. For example, to produce a catalepsy of the arm in the waking state the experimenter often makes mesmeric passes down it. This leads, as I have shown (p. 68), to a concentration of the subject's attention on the desired result. At least it appears from many experiments on this point that the attention of the subject is so concentrated; and this concentration leads to hypnosis.

Besides, in such suggestions the subject generally remembers an earlier hypnosis; and the idea of hypnosis is enough to induce it. Therefore we often need only to repeat a suggestion made in an earlier hypnosis to cause a new one (Marin).

The fact that paralyses, contractures, &c., can be produced by suggestion in this new hypnosis, shows that it is as real as the first. In the deeper states, when delusions of sense can be induced, loss of memory usually follows. The changed expression of the subject's face also shows there is hypnosis. Finally, the presence of a real hypnosis is proved by the *rapport* between subject and experimenter.

For the reasons above mentioned I think we should call many of these states true hypnoses, not suggestions without hypnosis. The school of Nancy, and particularly Liégeois and Beaunis, have to a certain extent acknowledged this. But they certainly have not given to the point all the importance it deserves. They thought many of these states were intermediate forms between sleeping and waking, which they identified with the *veille somnambulique* described above (p. 146).

I know that from what I have said it might be

concluded that all these suggestions were made in hypnosis. It is, in truth, very difficult to find clear diagnostic symptoms in certain cases. My explanation aims only at pointing out that there may really be hypnosis, though none of the usual methods have been employed to bring it on. I have, besides, tried to prevent suggestion in waking life, and especially to make delusions of the senses impossible.

It is often very difficult to decide whether there is hypnosis or not, because isolated hypnotic symptoms are often seen in certain people who are not in hypnosis. There are even delusions of the senses without hypnosis, sleep, or mental disorder, when circumstances influence the mind in a particular way. The common hallucination of smell is an example. People often imagine that they still smell things which have been removed. Delusions of sight are just as common. Many people have taken trees for men when walking in the twilight. Goethe's self-induced hallucinations of sight are well known. Delbœuf also describes a waking hallucination of sight; he thought he saw his dead mother, but corrected his impression by reason. If there are even delusions of the senses without hypnosis, it is evidently difficult to argue the presence of hypnosis from a single symptom.

I should call the following the chief points in settling the question whether a suggestion is made in hypnosis or not: 1. Of what kind are the suggestions? Are they of such a kind that they rarely occur normally? 2. After one suggestion has succeeded, can other suggestions be made as quickly as in hypnosis, or is a long preparation necessary for each suggestion? The quick success of the following suggestion would be in favour of hypnosis. 3. After the suggestion has succeeded, can the subject prevent

further suggestion by an act of will, or not? If he cannot, it favours the supposition of a hypnotic state. 4. Is there *rapport?* That is, can the subject be influenced by anybody or by only one? *Rapport* favours hypnosis. 5. Are there bodily symptoms of hypnosis? 6. Are the events subsequently forgotten? Loss of memory also favours the supposition of hypnosis.

The many transitional states between waking life and hypnosis will often make the question difficult to decide; none of the points above mentioned will alone suffice to settle it.

It sometimes happens that we try to induce a person to do something by looking at him fixedly; we then see how slight is the division between the hypnotic states and waking life. A teacher who thinks his pupil is lying, looks at him fixedly to ascertain the truth, just as is done in fascination. This fixed gaze affects the will of the person looked at, as we have seen in hypnosis. We recognize an analogy on one hand, on the other we see how difficult it must always be to decide where hypnosis begins and waking life ends.

States resembling, or perhaps identical with, hypnosis, are also found in animals, and can easily be experimentally induced. The first experiments of this kind are referred to by the Jesuit Kircher;—the so-called *experimentum mirabile Kircheri.* Kircher described these experiments in 1646. But according to Preyer the experiment had been made by Schwenter several years earlier. The most striking of these experiments, which are being continued in the present day, is as follows: A hen is held down on the ground; the head in particular is pressed down.

A chalk line is then drawn on the ground, starting from the bird's beak. The hen will remain motionless. Kircher ascribes this to the animal's imagination; he said that it imagined it was fastened, and consequently did not try to move. Czermak repeated the experiment on different animals, and announced in 1872 that a hypnotic state could be induced in other animals besides the hen. Preyer shortly after began to interest himself in the question, and made a series of experiments like Czermak's. Preyer, however, distinguishes two states in animals—catalepsy, which is the effect of fear, and the hypnotic state. Heubel, Richet, Danilewsky, and Rieger, besides the authors mentioned above, have occupied themselves with the question.

Most of the experiments have been made with frogs, crayfish, guinea-pigs, and birds. I myself have made many with frogs. This much is certain: many animals will remain motionless in any position in which they have been held by force for a time. There are various opinions as to the meaning of this. Preyer thinks many of these states are paralyses from fright, or catalepsy, produced by a sudden peripheral stimulus. In any case they vividly recall the catalepsy of the Salpêtrière, also caused by a strong external stimulus. It is said a sudden Drummond lime-light produces the same effect on a cock as it does on hysterical patients (Richer). But in general the external stimulus used with animals is tactile, as in seizing them. Heubel thinks that these states in animals are a true sleep following on the cessation of the external stimuli, and Wundt seems to agree with him.

Preyer has especially shown that the frog will remain rigid when upright, if it is kept from falling, as

well as when lying on its back. The hind leg of a frog lying on its back may be pulled out, and the animal will not draw it in again as it usually does. Richet, however, says that it is drawn in again at once, if the spinal cord is divided below the *medulla oblongata.* It is interesting that when a "hypnotic" frog is placed in a certain position it will at first move after a short time, but the more often the experiment is repeated the longer the frog lies without moving. I have seen frogs lie on their backs in this way for hours, and have even often seen them die without turning over. The deeper the state is, the less the animal responds to external stimuli; it ends by not moving at tolerably loud noises or even stimulation of the skin. Danilewsky made a series of experiments, from which he concluded that there were regular changes of reflex excitability; but Rieger was unable to confirm this. Danilewsky has lately made some more deeply interesting experiments, which it is to be hoped he will carry on. He says that when the brain hemispheres are taken away the frog assumes cataleptoid postures, and further that these turn into hypnoses in animals who have rotatory movements after injury of the semi-circular canals of the ear.

Harting's experiments also deserve mention; after repeated hypnotic experiments with fowls he observed hemiplegic phenomena in them, according to a communication by Milne-Edwards to the Paris Academy of Sciences.

I will not try to decide the question why these experiments with animals are undertaken. I do not think that they will help to elucidate hypnotic phenomena in human beings.

Another series of observations, which were chiefly

made for practical purposes, may be mentioned here. They also may be regarded as hypnotic phenomena. I speak of the so-called "*Balassiren*" of horses, introduced by the cavalry officer Balassa. This process has been introduced by law into Austria for the shoeing of horses (Obersteiner). It consists chiefly in looking fixedly at the horse, just as in "fascination." The numerous experiments of Wilson should also be mentioned; he is said to have hypnotized elephants, wolves, horses, &c., in London, in 1839. Fascination is used by beast tamers, who stare fixedly into the eyes of the animal they wish to tame. Many think that the charming of birds by snakes is fascination. Liébeault and Forel think that the winter sleep (hibernation) of animals is an auto-hypnosis; and so, perhaps, is the strange sleep of the Indian fakirs, which sometimes lasts for weeks and months (Fischer).

A number of trustworthy witnesses and authors (Jacolliot, Hildebrandt, Hellwald) tell us even stranger things about these fakirs, which set any attempt at explanation on the basis of our present scientific knowledge at defiance; that is, if we decline to regard them as mere juggler's tricks. Hildebrandt among other things relates that he saw a fakir sitting in a Hindoo temple; he was crouching down with his left arm stretched upwards; the arm was dead and so perfectly dry that the skin might easily have been torn from it. Another fakir had held his thumb pressed against the palm of his hand till the nail had grown deep into the flesh. It is said, besides, that some of these people can make plants grow very quickly. Görres mentioned this. These fakirs are also said to have been apparently buried for weeks and months, and yet have returned to normal life (?) Of course these things must be listened to with scep-

tical reserve. Yet even a scientific investigator like Hellwald thinks that though no doubt there is a great deal of jugglery, yet some of the phenomena remain at present inexplicable.

I have made but brief mention of these matters and of the experiments with animals ; details would take me too far. Any one who is interested will find material enough in Preyer's book, "Die Cataplexie und der thierische Hypnotismus." We can only mention these states as being analogous to hypnotic phenomena in human beings ; they have no further value for our subject.

CHAPTER V.

THE THEORY OF HYPNOTISM.

IT will appear from what has been said that the symptoms of hypnosis are extremely complex, and the question now is, "Can the phenomena of hypnosis be explained?" Before we reply to this, we must agree what we mean by "explanation." To explain a hitherto unknown thing, we must trace it back to what we do know. And as we know nothing of the real nature of our mental processes, it is useless to expect any satisfactory information regarding the mental state during hypnosis. It seems then that at present we must content ourselves with such an explanation as may be got by comparing the phenomena of normal life with those of hypnosis. We must settle what are the true, and what the apparent, differences between hypnotic and non-hypnotic life, and then we must find the causal connection between the peculiar phenomena of hypnosis and the means used to induce it. This last is the main point. An example will make this clearer. I will suppose that we want to find an explanation of a hypnotic negative hallucination of sight. We must first of all find some parallel phenomenon in a non-hypnotic state. If we find a case in which, without hypnosis, an object has not been perceived, though the eye must have seen it, we must then ask what difference there is between this pheno-

menon and the same phenomenon in hypnosis. We shall then find that in hypnosis objects are not perceived only when the experimenter forbids the perception ; but that to forbid the perception of an object in waking life would be to ensure its being perceived. This point of difference must be kept in view for a proper explanation. It will be explained by the existence in the one case of a peculiar state of consciousness—the so-called dream-consciousness ; and we must then ask how the origin of hypnosis explains the formation of this dream-consciousness. If we cannot find phenomena parallel to the methods of origination of hypnosis anywhere, we shall be obliged to give up the attempt at explanation for the present.

I believe that we can already explain many of the hypnotic phenomena, if "explanation" is taken in the above sense. In any case, such numerous analogies to the phenomena of hypnosis have already been found that we need no longer think them mystical. We need no longer think the methods of hypnosis incomprehensible, as was the case a short time ago. This progress has been made by following the method Obersteiner recommended ; *i.e.*, by carefully observing the transitional states between hypnosis and normal life. We have been able to connect many every-day occurrences with hypnosis, and have found many more connecting links with normal life than is generally supposed. I even believe, as I have said, that we can already explain certain hypnotic phenomena by means of analogy, and I think that many of the post-hypnotic phenomena are capable of explanation in the above meaning of the word.

But much remains to be done ; one method of investigation in especial should be more used ; *i.e.*,

self-observation. It is a great disadvantage that strict self-observation often prevents the induction of hypnosis; but on the other hand I think that our neglect of self-observation is the reason of our failure to explain many hypnotic phenomena clearly. It is true that some trustworthy investigators, such as Bleuler, Forel, Obersteiner, North, Heidenhain, and others have helped a little by their accounts of their personal experiences in the hypnotic state; but such observations should be made oftener by intelligent people; they would be valuable to investigators. An explanation of hypnosis drawn from the material already accumulated cannot be given in a few words, since the symptoms alone are so complex. Besides, I think it probable (and Braid was of the same opinion) that a great number of different states are included in the concept "hypnosis," and that an exact classification of them is not possible at present, though it surely will be later. Under these circumstances I think it best to discuss the most commonly observed and best established phenomena of hypnosis singly, and to explain them when possible. I must give up any attempt at completeness and detail in order not to make the theoretical explanation too long; I reserve this for another work. The chief points which I shall try to explain in what follows are—(1) the phenomena of suggestion as regards voluntary movement; (2) positive and negative delusions of the senses; (3) *rapport*; (4) the phenomena of memory; (5) post-hypnotic suggestion. I will discuss these points one by one and try to explain them in the manner described above. It may be thought, on a superficial view, that it would be more important to examine the way the methods employed induce hypnosis than to explain the separate symptoms;

but to discuss this would be to dispute about words, because hypnosis hardly ever appears suddenly, but rather develops itself by degrees out of a series of symptoms. For example, the eyes close first; then suggestion induces a heaviness in the arm, and then the arm is paralyzed; a suggested sense delusion follows. Hypnosis develops itself nearly if not quite always in this way; one symptom is added to another. Consequently to explain the separate symptoms is to explain the mode of production of hypnosis; the reader will find that the one explanation involves the other. This fact will become clear when the abnormal functions of the muscles are explained.

We shall understand the different symptoms of hypnosis much more easily if we first examine two phenomena. These phenomena might be laid down as laws of the psychical states of human beings, though they would be laws with many exceptions. They are not generally enough considered, but they are of immense importance to psychology, physiology, and medicine, as well as to hypnotism. These rules are—(1) men have a certain proneness to allow themselves to be influenced by others through their ideas, and in particular to believe much without making conscious logical deductions; (2) a psychological or physiological effect tends to appear in a man if he is expecting it.

Let us begin by considering the first point. There are people who believe that they can escape external psychical influences; but they are wrong, since observation shows that every one is more or less influenced by ideas (Bentivegni, Bernheim). Life is full of such influences, and they will work so long as there is mental activity among men. The desire for society,

the necessity of exchanging opinions, show the need we feel of influencing and being influenced by ideas. If we want to convert a political opponent we try to influence him by arousing certain ideas in him. It is not mentally deficient people who are thus accessible to ideas. There is in every man a gap where these ideas can enter. It is well known that the greatest people and most distinguished scholars are often dominated by some inferior individual who has discovered the gap where his ideas will enter.

In the same way men have a tendency to believe things without complete logical proof; we will call this quality credulity. Those who contend that men are not credulous, show that they are themselves incapable of reflection (Forel). There is no man who believes only what has been logically proved to him. Our sense perceptions show us this in the clearest way; we hardly ever consciously reason upon them, and yet the thing which we take for an external object is only in reality an act of our minds, which in no way corresponds with the unknown object, the "thing in itself," as Kant calls it. Most people confuse the subjective idea of an object with the object itself (Spencer). This mistake, which we make incessantly with regard to our sense perceptions, proves that we do not use conscious logical thought. But when we consider our behaviour with regard to dogmatic assertions, and to assertions often repeated, this credulity is made particularly clear. It leads us to dogmatic belief. Children are most influenced by it, but adults are also under its jurisdiction.

As children are particularly credulous of dogmatic assertions, and as such credulity is strongly marked in hypnosis, this state has often been compared to childhood (Copin, Miescher, Cullerre, Wernicke). But I must point out that in this com-

parison childhood and infancy are confused. To make the comparison possible we must choose a period of childhood in which ideas can be incorporated into the existing consciousness, not the period of infancy, in which consciousness is hardly formed.

I will give a simple example of the credulity of childhood with regard to dogmatic belief. I was told at school that the North Cape was the north point of Europe. This was not logically proved to me; yet I believed it because it was in the book, and more especially because the teacher said so. Dogmatic assertion influences not only children but adults; and the constant repetition of an assertion has also a great power. This is shown in the clearest way by an incident which is particularly interesting to us. A few years ago it was believed that there was really no such thing as hypnotism, and that those who believed in it were deceived. But since that time opinion has entirely changed. The representations made by different people in authority as to the reality of the hypnotic phenomena, and particularly the repeated assertions of numerous investigators, have caused a complete change of view. Doctors and others have changed their minds about hypnotism, not because it has been proved to them, but exclusively because they have been influenced by constantly hearing and reading the same assertions about it, and by their faith in authority.

I hope that the above explanations, which every one can add to from his own experience, sufficiently prove what I said above—that all men are credulous to a certain degree. Now for the second of my propositions—*i.e.*, that an effect on himself which a man expects tends to appear. We can find a great number of these phenomena in ordinary life; they

are mysterious and astonishing only when we neglect to consider this tendency. Carpenter, Hack Tuke, and many English investigators have besides admitted that these phenomena are of great importance. I will now describe some of them.

People who suffer from sleeplessness have often been sent to sleep by taking something which they were told was a sleeping draught, but which was really some inert substance. They slept because they expected to do so. When they learn that the medicine is not a sleeping draught they no longer expect sleep, and do not sleep. It appears from this that to expect a state, and to wish for it, are essentially different things; which fact is often strangely enough overlooked. A great many people wish for sleep, but as they do not expect it, it does not come. Some other examples will show that this principle is generally valid; for example, the fatigue that is felt at the usual bedtime may be mentioned. We see how much habit has to do with it; when people have been long used to go to bed at a certain time, they generally feel tired just at that time (Forel). The rule holds good for the functions of the motor organs as well as the others. We will take a case of hysterical paralysis; it is well known that such a paralysis is sometimes cured at the exact moment the patient expects. Many mysterious effects may be thus explained. Hysterical patients can often foretell an improvement in their paralyses. This gift of prophecy need not astonish us if we think of this rule; the connection is not what believers in the gift of prophecy think; for the hysterical patient is cured at a particular time because he expects to be—the prophecy causes its own fulfilment.

Of course there are exceptions to the rule. How-

ever much a sufferer from severe myelitis may expect his paralyzed legs to move they will not do so, because the impediments are too great to be overcome by this natural tendency of expectation to produce an effect. There are other impediments which, though they do not interfere with the tendency as such, prevent its taking effect.

Another example. People are often sick when they expect to be sick at a particular time, and particularly if they think they have taken an emetic ; and they stammer when they expect to stammer.

Many observations show that the above rule holds good for the organs of sense under particular circumstances ; the following case of Carpenter's is related by Bentivegni. A judicial disinterment was to be made ; the grave was opened, and the coffin raised ; the official who was present said that he already smelt putrefaction, but when the coffin was opened it was found to be empty. Here expectation caused a distinct sense perception. There are many examples of this. Yung has made a series of experiments, and has shown that the sense of touch and the sense of temperature are particularly subject to delusion, and that certain perceptions occur when they are expected without external stimuli. I myself have often repeated the following experiments of Braid, Weinhold, and others. I blindfolded certain persons, doctors among the number, or I simply made them close their eyes. I then told the subject that he was going to be mesmerized ; and even when this was not true, he generally imagined he felt the current of air caused by the passes ; he believed he knew the exact moment when the passes were begun. Here again we see expectation produce a perception. Many people begin to feel the pain of an operation almost

before the knife has touched them, simply because their whole attention is fixed upon the pain and the beginning of the operation.

The principle has other effects. Forel and many others mention that there are certain popular methods of slightly retarding menstruation. In one town many of the young women tie something round their little finger if they wish to delay menstruation for a few days in order to go to a ball, &c. The method is generally effectual, but when faith ceases the effect also ceases.

I hope that what has been said sufficiently explains the second rule mentioned above.

I go on to discuss single phenomena of hypnosis; the functional disturbances of voluntary movement first. These are seen in every hypnosis, as I said before in speaking of the symptoms; they are almost always the first symptom, even when there are other changes. The principle just developed, that an expected functional abnormality comes on when expected if it is not hindered by mechanical or other insuperable obstacles, best explains the abnormalities of the voluntary movements. But to understand this thoroughly, the hypnosis should be induced by slow degrees, as in this case the motor disturbances are plainer.

Now, the previous discussion makes it evident that to produce any motor disorder in a subject (X.) who is at present in a perfectly normal state, we must first of all draw his attention to the desired effect, and make him firmly expect it; that is, we must be able to place the conviction in the foreground of the subject's thoughts, or, as Fechner and Wundt express it, in the range of his inner perspective. If we succeed in

capturing the subject's attention to such a point that he firmly believes something—*e.g.*, that his arm will be paralyzed—the paralysis will generally happen.

It would evidently be unfavourable if the subject should reflect and criticize while the attempt to direct his attention was being made. If he does so an effectual concentration of his attention is impossible. Numerous other conditions must be fulfilled before we can make an idea dominate the subject's attention ; these conditions are for the most part the same which I mentioned as favouring the coming on of hypnosis, when I was speaking of its production. It is clear, therefore, that the surroundings, the subject's mental state as well as the manner of the experimenter's entrance, play a great part. The favourable influence of imitation is also easily explicable ; for these things may greatly influence the subject's expectation of the effect. For example, a person who has seen paralysis induced by certain passes in another subject's arm, will be much more likely to let the same phenomenon be induced in himself, than would another who had not seen it.

Supposing such a paralysis induced, the subject's mental balance is already disturbed. If a man cannot voluntarily move his arm he feels at once that his will is weakened ; a mental state ensues which Pierre Janet often calls "*misère psychique*" ; a peculiar feeling of weakened will-power. This feeling is very important ; by means of it the subject's power of resistance is lessened more and more. When one limb has been paralyzed it is easier to paralyze a second, because the subject already doubts his own will-power. Thus, when the subject can no longer voluntarily move a limb, or part of it, very much has been gained for further susceptibility to suggestion, because the consciousness of weakness favours the acceptance of later suggestions. The development of suggestibility need no longer astonish us, since we have found the clue to its production.

I have endeavoured to explain the disturbances of the muscular functions in their gradual development, as it were; this development is in many cases nearly identical with that of hypnosis, which, as we have seen, is often merely an inhibition of the voluntary muscular functions. Many of the methods used to induce hypnosis are alike in one particular—they direct the subject's attention to some change in the functions of the muscles. The method of the school of Nancy consists chiefly in making the subject expect the closing of his eyes as strongly as possible, though this method also aims at producing the dream-consciousness, of which I shall speak later. But other methods induce abnormalities in the functions of single limbs in just the same way. For example, an arm or leg loses its power to move when I concentrate the attention of the subject upon the loss of power to move. In fact, it is quite unnecessary to begin with the eyes, as the school of Nancy does; we can begin with any member, as Max Dessoir rightly insists.

As a fact, it does not matter whether the first motor disturbance is a muscular action performed against the subject's will—*i.e.*, a certain movement which the subject makes at command—or whether it is an inability to move, caused also by a command. The great thing is to gain enough influence over the subject. In any case we should begin with the disturbance which is the easiest to induce, because one success increases the experimenter's influence. Now as a rule it is easier to inhibit an action than to cause it, as daily observation shows. An example may make this clear. We assure a person whose arm is stretched out that he is tired and cannot hold it out any longer. In almost all cases there is a momentary pull down-

wards; *i.e.*, there is an inclination to lower the arm. This shows that there is often susceptibility to suggestion without hypnosis. I will briefly recapitulate; the disturbances of voluntary movement induced by suggestion in hypnosis are caused by the experimenter's directing the attention of the subject as strongly as possible to the desired effect. When the attempt has once succeeded, further disturbances may be more easily induced, since the subject is already persuaded of his inability to resist.

This principle of the effects of expectant attention illustrated above is nowhere shown more plainly than in the voluntary movements. It is even not always necessary that a movement should be very attentively expected; the idea of the movement will induce it. Let a man bend his arm at the elbow at right angles, and think that the arm will bend quickly, without expecting it to do so; if he fixes his whole attention on this idea the movement will very soon follow. This shows again how great is the tendency to make a certain movement when the subject concentrates his whole attention on that one point. If expectation is added to attention the effect will be so much the greater.

I now come to the discussion and explanation of sense delusions; first of all, of the positive kind. Are we not exposed to such delusions otherwise than in hypnosis? Take first a very simple example of Max Dessoir's. I say to some one who is quite awake, "A rat is running behind you." The man can assure himself at once by turning round that there is no rat, but according to experience he will have a mental image of a rat for a moment, because I spoke of it; *i.e.*, there is already a trace of hallucination.

Modern psychology, following such men as Dugald Stewart and Taine, generally supposes that every idea includes an image, *e.g.*, the idea of a knife includes an image of a knife. As further every central image tends to externalize itself, as Stuart Mill in particular has explained, when an idea is aroused, there is always a tendency to externalize the corresponding image, *i.e.*, there is a tendency to hallucination. We have thus a tendency to take the remembered image of former sense perceptions for real objects (Binet, Féré).

So in the case of the rat there is a transitory hallucination. Its persistence is prevented in two ways. Firstly, the man could convince himself by means of his senses that no rat was there. Secondly, reflection and the logical grouping of former pictures of memory would convince him that no rat was present. The two factors would suffice to prevent the persistence of the suggested delusion. A simple consideration shows that sense perceptions are not always needed to prevent hallucination. Tell a person whose eyes are shut that a rat is running in front of him. Without opening his eyes he is convinced of the contrary, and says it is not true. Although the image of the rat arises in his mind for a moment, it does not grow into a definite sense delusion, because reflection and memory prevent it. It is not the sense perceptions which prevent it; calm, critical reflection is enough. This is often of more value in preventing a threatening hallucination than the perceptions.

We have thus learned to distinguish the different effects of a suggested hallucination in the waking and in the hypnotic states; we have seen that in the latter the hallucinations arise absolutely without any new factor. They increase in strength and persistence because they are not hindered by sense perceptions or critical reflection. It must now be asked, Are there states analogous to these also?

We must make it perfectly clear that we have a dream-consciousness completely distinct from the waking consciousness (Ed. v. Hartmann), in which feelings and perceptions do not occur at all in the same way as in the waking consciousness. When we wake from sleep we are able to distinguish dream-consciousness from waking life simply by recollection. We know whether what we dreamed was only a dream, or whether it was real (Bentivegni). It is true that in dreams ideas are reproduced and perceptions felt, but in two respects (according to Wundt) this consciousness differs from that of waking life. In the first place the remembered ideas have a hallucinatory character, *i.e.*, we try in dreams to objectify the images of memory ; we do not recognize that they are images of memory as we do in waking life, but believe that we see, feel, &c., the real object to which they correspond. In the same way external impressions do not produce normal perceptions, but illusions. In the second place, in dreams the faculty of perception is changed ; *i.e.*, the power of judging the experiences of which we are conscious is essentially altered. It is just this peculiarity of the dream-consciousness (mentioned by Wundt) which is found in the consciousness of such hypnotic subjects as are accessible to suggested sense delusions. There is no need to enter into details on this point, as it has been thoroughly discussed in the chapters on " Symptoms " and " Cognate States." The chief point is the hallucinatory character of the images of memory ; faintly indicated in normal states, in dream-consciousness it is extremely plain, and appears in hypnosis in connection with illusions, to which dream-consciousness is also favourable. But we may be sure that such a dream-consciousness is by no means a strange and

new thing, since it is often found in ordinary sleep; or, rather, it seems to be habitual in sleep, as has just been shown. The production of this peculiar dream-consciousness is one of the chief points in hypnotizing. The question is, how is it brought about; is there a causal connection between dream-consciousness and the induction of hypnosis? I need not discuss this at length, since we already know that children may be talked to in sleep. In adults dream-consciousness only appears in hypnosis when they have been sent to sleep by some methods like those used to induce ordinary sleep. As we have seen, hypnosis is generally induced mentally. Now, Forel, Liébeault, and many other investigators say that natural sleep is the immediate result of a mental process—an auto-suggestion of sleep, in fact. I do not contend that the products of tissue waste in the body may not produce sleep without arousing the idea of it, but it is a fact that in many cases—whether in all must be left undecided at present—we fall asleep merely because we have the idea of sleep, and are convinced we shall sleep. As sleep is only a particular state of consciousness, it is not clear why we cannot induce certain people to sleep by telling them to do so, when we are hypnotizing them. We can talk people into all sorts of states of consciousness; the priest, the popular orator do so every day. Why can we not induce dream-consciousness in a like way, as is often done as a matter of fact when children are put to sleep?

It is true that in many cases dream-consciousness can be induced in hypnosis by means which have nothing to do with the induction of sleep; for example, when, a hypnotic subject fixes his gaze and his eyes finally close, this does not appear to be the induction of a

state of sleep. Nevertheless,I think that sleep comes on, even when it is not purposely suggested. Sleep may be brought on by the feeling of heaviness in the eyes, through association of ideas (Forel); for some people are in the habit of staring fixedly at a point in order to tire their eyes and bring on their ordinary sleep. For these reasons, about which I cannot enter into more details here, I believe that when a hallucination happens in hypnosis, some means of inducing dream-consciousness have always been used. Even those hypnoses in which hallucinations happen without previous closing of the eyes do not contradict this, since the dream-consciousness is not necessarily connected with the closing of the eyes. It sometimes comes on when the eyes are open, as is seen in cases of spontaneous somnambulism. After what has been said we can find an explanation of sense delusions in the analogy between these hypnotic states and sleep. Certainly we do not know why sense delusions happen in ordinary sleep. I have not space to enter into the different attempts at explanation which have been made, and, besides, it would be useless. But I think it will provisionally help us in examining hypnosis if we take the hypnotic states in which there are pronounced sense delusions, as completely corresponding with ordinary sleep and its dream-consciousness. In both states certain impressions of external origin (memory pictures, or mere stimulations of the senses) induce sense delusions. It is only necessary that the impression which causes the delusion should affect the sleeper deeply enough.

These conclusions lead to a discussion of *rapport*. This *rapport* causes the subject to be more influenced by certain impressions than by others, and to respond

to them by corresponding sense delusions. I shall speak of *rapport* briefly, as I am preparing a detailed publication about it. According to Noizet and Bertrand, who have been joined lately by Liébeault, Bernheim, Forel, and others, *rapport* is a state of sleep in which the attention of the subject is fixed exclusively upon the hypnotizer, so that the idea of him is constantly present in the subject's memory. On this account Bertrand compared these processes to the falling asleep of a mother by her child's cradle. She continues to watch over it in sleep ; she hears the least sound it makes, but no other sounds. This analogy may explain the peculiar influence which a hypnotizer has over his subject. The subject has fallen asleep with the thought of the hypnotizer in his mind, and hears only what he says, as in the case of the mother and child.

It is also not strange that this influence should increase in the course of hypnotic training, as we see that the influence which one person has over another in normal circumstances grows with exercise. No new psychical law is to be found in hypnosis.

When we go on to discuss the negative hallucinations and the way they originate in hypnosis, we remark two things: firstly, that the subject does not see certain objects or hear certain noises, &c.; secondly, and more particularly, that the objects he does not see are just those he is forbidden by the hypnotist to see. I have mentioned that many things are not seen and heard in normal circumstances when the attention is not directed to them. These facts are not astonishing, but the way they originate in hypnosis is striking. If I tell a waking man who has a chair in front of him, "There is nothing there,

neither chair nor table," he will see the chair in spite of what I say; but the hypnotic subject will not see it, at least if he is susceptible to negative hallucination. Now we can regard this process in the hypnotic as a diversion of the attention, like that in the waking man who fails to perceive things which stimulate his organs of sense.

This is shown in particular by those hallucinations which vanish the moment the attention is drawn to the hallucinatory object. We can see clearly in such cases that the negative hallucination was caused by the diversion of the attention from the object, and that the direction of the attention to it was a counter-suggestion. I say to a subject, "When you wake, X. will have gone away." When he wakes and is asked how many people are present, he says, "Two; you and I." I then point out X., and tell the subject to look at him. Then he sees X., and the suggestion has lost its effect.

But in any case the mode of origin is remarkable. For just because I told the hypnotic subject the chair was not there, he did not see it; but if I told a man in the normal state that the chair was not there, he would be all the more certain to see it. My remark would draw his attention to it. How can we explain the completely opposite result with the hypnotic subject?

According to Binet and Féré, another factor must be added to the diversion of the attention; before it can be attained a conviction that the chair is not there must be first established in the subject. Without this there would hardly be a negative hallucination.

It is a certain fact, observable without hypnosis, that such an established conviction favours negative hallucinations.

Let us suppose a man occupied with work in some place which is generally quiet, and where he does not expect noise ; let us suppose some noise is made ; the man will not perceive it. Yet he would have heard the same noise if he had known beforehand that it would be made. In just the same way he would fail to see a spark of light if he had the conviction beforehand that no light was there, but would perceive it if he expected it. The expectation of an effect is very favourable to its appearance. Consequently we have here another analogy between hypnotic and non-hypnotic processes.

We see, then, that under normal circumstances the conviction that a thing is not there makes it probable it will not be perceived. If we make use of this principle to explain negative hallucinations in hypnosis we must ask, How is the conviction that a thing is not there established in the subject? We must come back to his subjective feelings of weakened will and dependence. A whole series of experiments which have convinced the subject of his weakness has generally been made before the negative hallucination succeeds. When he is once convinced that everything really happens which the hypnotist says, he will believe him more and more. The hypnotist has generally made many suggestions of movement to him, and has induced in him the positive hallucinations of which I have given an explanation above. Consequently we cannot feel surprised that the subject inclines to believe him when he is told by him that some object is not there.

Nevertheless these two factors, the diversion of the subject's attention and the conviction established in him, do not suffice to explain negative hallucinations. However firmly he believes the hypnotist, without such motives as would induce belief under normal circumstances (as Bentivegni rightly points out), this does not alone explain such mistakes of the sense

perceptions as are found in negative hallucinations. A completely changed state of consciousness must be added if we wish to understand negative hallucinations; the dream-consciousness again, which helped us to understand positive delusions of the senses. For dream-consciousness is not only distinguished by the reappearance of former memory pictures as hallucinations; it is also characterized by the fact that sense impressions which under normal circumstances become feelings and perceptions induce in it no feeling or perception. To recapitulate: there are three factors for the production of negative hallucinations: firstly, dream-consciousness; secondly, the conviction established in the subject of the absence of an object; and thirdly, the diversion of the attention which results from this.

We can explain the analgesia of some hypnotic subjects in a like manner. It is known that an expected pain is more acutely felt than an unexpected one. When any one believes that the effect of some stimulus will be painful he will feel the pain much sooner than he would if he did not expect it and believe in it. We see this in operations; the subject feels much more pain when he expects the stroke of the knife and sees it than when it takes him unawares; in the latter case he often feels hardly any pain. It is the same thing with analgesia in hypnosis. I still doubt whether there is ever an entirely spontaneous analgesia without suggestion, though I have mentioned it above. In any case analgesia is more usually induced by suggestion. Here again we may take it that the hypnotic subject has been preconvinced by the repeated assertions and suggestions of the hypnotist, and that he has in consequence an unreasoning credulity. If now the hypnotist firmly

insists upon the analgesia, the subject will soon believe in and expect it, and this will greatly help him to it.

The phenomena of the memory must now be considered. Such a derangement of the memory as sometimes happens in hypnosis is certainly very striking, though it is clear at once that we can find many analogies in ordinary life. I need not, of course, discuss those hypnotic states in which there is no derangement of the memory.

But there are persons who, after waking from hypnosis, remember nothing of what has happened. It is also a well-known fact that we forget certain events, apart from hypnosis. We entirely forget certain mechanical actions, such as the winding of a watch. But some things done with reflection and in perfect consciousness are occasionally forgotten. We have here, then, an analogy to the forgetfulness of the hypnotic subject. But these analogies by no means explain the sudden and often nearly systematic forgetfulness in hypnotic states. We studied this phenomenon when discussing the memory before, and we also saw that the subject in hypnosis remembered all the events of preceding hypnoses, and of his waking life; we called this "double consciousness." This requires special consideration. It is, indeed, a striking phenomenon that two complete and thoroughly separate states of consciousness can be induced and distinguished in a human being; so that in one, the waking life, the events of waking life only are remembered; and in the other, the hypnotic state, the events of preceding hypnoses and of waking life. If we think of the life of such a being as divided into several periods, *a*, *b*, *c*, *d*, *e*, *f*, *g*, in the periods *a*, *c*, *e*, *g*, only

the events of those periods will be remembered, so that in period *c* he will remember only what happened in *a*, and in period *e* what happened in *a* and *c*. On the other hand, in the periods *b*, *d*, *f*, both what has happened in them and in *a*, *c*, *e*, will be remembered. This is very remarkable, particularly when it happens spontaneously, *i.e.*, without suggestion.

In order to explain this double consciousness I must return to Max Dessoir's theory of the "Doppel Ich," or double Ego; I must, however, describe it exactly before it can be applied to our subject.

Max Dessoir supposes, with Pierre Janet, that human personality is a unity merely to our consciousness, but that it consists really of at least two clearly distinguishable personalities, each held together by its own chain of memories. He chooses several ways of establishing this principle. According to him many actions are done unconsciously, though of mental origin. I do not notice many automatic movements, *e.g.*, rubbing the hands when they are cold, &c. The experiment made by Barkworth is more complicated than this. He can add up long rows of figures while carrying on a lively discussion, without allowing his attention to be at all diverted from the discussion.

This shows that, in the first place, there is an unconscious intelligence in men, as is seen in the rubbing of the cold hands, and in the second place, that there is an unconscious memory; for Barkworth, for example, must have at least two groups of figures in his memory, to make a third out of them; he must retain the third to add a fourth. But this chain of memory is independent of the other chain, by means of which he carries on the conversation (Max Dessoir). As, according to Max Dessoir, consciousness and memory

are the two elements of personality, he supposes that in the above-mentioned case of Barkworth there are the elements of a second personality. The mental processes which take place consciously to the man are called the primary consciousness, and those which go on without his knowledge the secondary consciousness; the action of both together is a state of double consciousness, or "doubled consciousness" (Max Dessoir). Thus in Barkworth's case the primary consciousness carried on the conversation, while the secondary one mechanically performed the addition.

To prevent confusion it should be impressed on the reader that what has hitherto been habitually called consciousness will for the future be called primary consciousness. Generally speaking "consciousness" means the sum of subjectively perceived mental processes. We must now give it a wider meaning. Consciousness falls into two halves, primary and secondary, and the primary consciousness is consciousness in the older sense of the word.

In the case above mentioned both consciousnesses exist together, but they may, under certain circumstances, follow one another. Max Dessoir tells of a case in which a person took up his dream on a second night where he had left off on the first. Here, then, the dream-consciousness tended to form a new chain of memories. The same author puts the following case of Macario's with the last: A girl who was outraged during an attack of spontaneous somnambulism knew nothing about it when she woke, and only told her mother of what had happened in her next attack. Such cases occur under morbid pathological conditions (*cf.* p. 128).

These cases in dream and in morbid conditions show the two consciousnesses following one another

as the Barkworth case showed them co-existing. Max Dessoir mentions other examples in support of his view, but I am unable to go into them here.

To return to hypnosis. We have now to explain the state of double consciousness. Max Dessoir thinks that hypnosis simply exhibits the hidden half of our mental life ; the part which is called secondary consciousness and which can occasionally be observed in ordinary life, or more plainly in pathological states.

Although I believe that Max Dessoir includes too much in his idea of the double Ego (*Doppel Ich*), his explanations are none the less valuable for the consideration of the double consciousness in hypnosis. It is not necessary for our purpose to generalize this theory, as, though double consciousness is sometimes observed in hypnosis, it is by no means so common as some authors suppose. I shall return several times to this double consciousness, which, however, I do not conceive on the plan of Max Dessoir. Even if we suppose that hypnosis is simply the demonstration by experiment of the pre-existing double consciousness, the question of the causal connection between the origin of hypnosis and this demonstration still remains unanswered. Perhaps we may call in dream-consciousness again ; it may be that it is induced by the originating of hypnoses, and may complete the secondary consciousness. Delbœuf, who by no means accepts the sharp division of the primary and secondary consciousness, identifies the hypnotic phenomena entirely with nightly dreams, as far as the subsequent recollection is concerned. In this case we could explain the causal connection between the production of hypnosis and the appearance of double consciousness in the same way as we explain sense delusions

by the experimental induction of dream-consciousness. I will not go into further details with regard to the phenomena of memory during hypnosis, as I have already mentioned many analogies in speaking of the symptoms.

The post-hypnotic suggestions will occupy us a little longer, because, in a certain sense, they can be explained by analogy. For this purpose I will choose some action induced by post-hypnotic suggestion, and will suppose it to be a case of hypnosis without subsequent loss of memory.

Here is an analogous case in waking life. I give a letter to X., who has called on me, and ask him to post it on his way home, if he passes a letter-box. This he does.

I now give exactly the same commission to Y., who is in a hypnotic state, without subsequent loss of memory.

In both cases my commission is executed. Now the question is, What is the difference between the two cases? In the case of Y., one circumstance may strike us, *i.e.*, that he did the act without, or perhaps against, his will.

The fact that Y. posted the letter *without* willing to do so does not distinguish his case from X.'s. X. walked home with Z. and talked all the way. He passed a pillar-box, and though he continued to talk, and apparently did not notice the box, he mechanically threw the letter into it. Later it occurred to him that he had the letter to post; he had a faint recollection of having done it. He could, however, convince himself of the fact by feeling in his pocket for the letter. We see, then, that he executed the commission without conscious will.

It would be more striking if X. should do some such action *against* his will. In the action described this was not the case. He would not have executed the commission if his will had not consented. Also, he would have remembered the action if his will had opposed it. There must always be consciousness when the will is exerted to prevent something. There must be an idea of the action to be performed. What is striking in post-hypnotic suggestion is exactly the fact that it is carried out against the will, in which case the subject of course knows what is to be done, and has an idea of it. It is this idea which causes a post-hypnotic action to be carried out in spite of the will.

The question now is whether we can find an analogy to this in waking life, whether an idea can in this case cause a motor or other effect in spite of the will. The answer must be, "Very commonly."

We saw, when talking of suggestion in the waking state, that an idea is sometimes enough to cause an action or a particular state in spite of the will. This is a common occurrence. We will suppose that A. has lost a dear relation. A. is in consequence sad and depressed, and cannot refrain from tears. Months pass, and he grows calm; but when the anniversary of the death arrives he falls again into the same state of mental excitement and tears, which he cannot conquer. The vivid idea has been enough to throw him, against his will, into a certain state.

A person who stammers is in the same case. Alone at home he can speak quite well, but a stranger comes in and he begins to stammer. He stammers because he thought he should stammer, and his will is powerless both over the thought and the stammering. We see the same sort of thing constantly, and

certain states of illness are induced merely by a vivid expectation of them ; they then come on in spite of the will. Accordingly it is not astonishing that a post-hypnotic suggestion should succeed against the subject's will.

The post-hypnotic movements and actions carried out in spite of the will—or, to speak more exactly, in spite of the wish—have a great likeness to the instinctive movements well known in Psychology, which are often made to satisfy a pleasure which follows from the act. Such instinctive movements are entirely independent of the will ; they take place in spite of the wish. For example, the raising of the hand to ward off danger is an instinctive movement (Wundt). Here there may very well be an idea of the movement, though deeper mental processes compel its execution, as in many cases of post-hypnotic suggestion carried out in spite of the will. It is the same thing in cases of so-called impulsive mania. The patients act without clear ideas of their motives. Their actions appear to be impelled by instinct, though they are consciously carried out (Schüle).

I have now considered why post-hypnotic suggestions are carried out without, or in spite of, the will. I supposed a case in which the subject remembered the order given him in hypnosis after he woke ; *i.e.*, I considered only those cases in which there was no loss of memory in waking. It is a more enigmatic question, why post-hypnotic suggestions are carried out when there is loss of memory after waking, and the subject in consequence is apparently unconscious of having received the command.

For explanation let us return to the case of waking life, where X. was to post a letter. I point out that

X. did not keep the request continually in his consciousness, and that he even apparently posted the letter unconsciously; yet he would not have performed the action at all if he had not really remembered my request.

It is the same in post-hypnotic suggestion. It really remains in the memory, and the unconsciousness is only apparent. All post-hypnotic suggestions are merely apparently forgotten between waking and fulfilment. To prove this I must digress a little and go back to the primary consciousness, which is the name given to our subjective mentally perceived processes, while the unperceived ones are called the secondary consciousness.

The state of the primary consciousness is not uniform, but, on the contrary, subject to constant changes. In one period we are conscious of ideas which are wanting in others. One period comprises more than another. Now, if we call the sum of mental processes perceived in one state a sphere of consciousness, we may suppose a number of such spheres. But not to complicate the subject too much, we will suppose two spheres, which will answer our purpose.

We saw, when discussing the memory, that the hypnotic subject who forgot the events of hypnosis in waking life remembered them in later hypnosis. But he remembered the events of waking life also in hypnosis, though in waking life he was only conscious of the events of that life. We have, then, two different spheres of consciousness here: one comprises the events of hypnosis and of waking life, the other only those of waking life. They follow one another.

During waking life there are only memory pictures of this life in the primary consciousness; in the

secondary consciousness there are memory pictures of the hypnotic state, *i.e.*, the impressions of hypnosis are received, but do not rise into the primary consciousness. But it must not be thought that the two consciousnesses are completely separated. Impressions made on the secondary consciousness occasionally rise to the primary. Upon this fact depends the restoration of memory through association of ideas, spoken of on p. 125. It can also be proved that the impressions of hypnosis by no means disappear in waking life, but are really firmly established in the brain.

To prove this I must digress again, and mention automatic writing. I owe my knowledge of this to Dr. Max Dessoir, whom I again thank for his unselfish and genuinely scientific help in the writing of this book. This automatic writing is of great interest and importance. It has been also observed among uncivilized peoples (Doolittle, Bastian).

I have had frequent occasion to speak of automatic movements and actions. To prevent confusion of ideas it should be expressly mentioned that I do not mean here by automatic movements, those so called by Liébeault and Bernheim, which Max Dessoir more justly calls continued movements (*cf.* p. 69). By automatic movements I here mean those of which we are unconscious at the moment they are made, though they show all the symptoms of a mental causation. When I walk my movements are nearly always automatic; I walk without being conscious of making the individual movements.

With regard to automatic writing, it should be mentioned that there are men who habitually move their fingers on the table while they are talking or thinking. When such people take a pencil in their hands they make all sorts of scribbled marks without observing it, while they are thinking of other things. This scribbling may be regarded as the beginning of automatic writing. It may take a certain rational form. Schiller says that when reflecting he has often covered whole sheets of paper with little horses (Max Dessoir). Other people automatically write letters and words, and this process is called

automatic writing; it is evidently guided by a species of intelligence, as without it no rational words could be written. But this intelligence resides in the writer, though it may not be conscious in the ordinary sense of the word; it is the secondary consciousness, which carries on movements and actions as does the primary consciousness, although the person concerned does not remark them. In any case the intelligence is innate in the person, and is part of him, and not an external force or spirit, as the spiritualists, who are also acquainted with it, and call it mediumistic writing, say it is.

I ask the reader to follow me through some experiments with automatic writing. I give a person who is not in hypnosis a pen or pencil and ask him to answer some question in writing—for example, what he had for dinner yesterday; he is, however, to leave his hand passive and not write on purpose; at the same time I put the point of the pencil on paper. It would not be strange that the person should write down something he is thinking of. It would remind us of the experiments in thought-reading described (p. 56). The person thinks of roast veal and the hand makes corresponding movements. But the process becomes rather different when I talk quietly to the writer meanwhile. I speak of the theatre, the weather, &c.; in the meantime the hand writes "roast veal." It appears that this was yesterday's dinner. In this case the hand wrote without concentration of thought on the writer's part; and this is already different from the usual thought-reading. A rational and true answer has been given to a direct question while a conversation was being carried on. As the writing was not noticed it follows that it was automatic. This automatic writing is certainly striking.

Now, though the writer did not know he was writing, he knew the fact which he unconsciously wrote down; *i.e.*, he knew that he had had roast veal for dinner yesterday. But there are also persons who will answer questions through automatic writing about things they do not know at all, *e.g.*, when somebody is asked what he had for dinner every day last week, he will write down the whole list of dishes, though he does not know them himself, *i.e.*, though they are not in his primary consciousness.

Such experiments are very good when made in hypnosis, and sense delusions, especially the negative ones, are made more intelligible by them, as was pointed out on p. 184. I suggest to X., in hypnosis, that A. and B., who are really present, have

gone away. X. ceases entirely to respond to A. and B.; he neither hears nor sees them. When I ask him who is present he says, "Only you and I"; upon which I give him a pencil and paper and command him to answer the question in writing. He writes, "Dr. Moll, Mr. A., Mr. B., and myself." Consequently he has answered the question intelligently, without knowing that he is writing. This shows that A. and B. were really perceived, but that X. was unconscious of the perception.

We will now return to the starting-point of our discussion.

By means of automatic writing it can be proved that the impressions of hypnosis are really firmly lodged in the brain; Gurney, F. Myers, and Pierre Janet have made a series of very good experiments on this point. X., for example, is waked from hypnosis and remembers nothing that has happened; but when he is ordered to write automatically what was said to him he does it. Now, as he could not tell these things, and they are not to be found in the primary consciousness, these experiments in automatic writing prove that the impressions exist all the same. They disclose themselves in the automatic writing.

We have now to show why the post-hypnotic suggestion is carried out in spite of loss of memory. We have seen that this loss of memory only exists so far that the hypnotic events and the post-hypnotic suggestion are to be found in the secondary consciousness only. In any case, as I have shown, the loss of memory is only apparent, and the post-hypnotic suggestion is lodged in the secondary consciousness. And this, as I have also shown by automatic writing, acts with a certain intelligence, and without confusion in its proper chain of thought.

The foregoing explanations show, firstly, why a post-hypnotic suggestion is carried out without the will or in spite of it; and, secondly, why it is carried

out in spite of the apparent forgetting of the command. A further question is this—Why is a post-hypnotic suggestion carried out at the right moment? The answer will differ according to the manner in which the moment for the execution of the suggestion is decided. We already know (p. 142) that the moment may be appointed in numerous ways; either by a concrete external sign—*e.g.*, the striking of the clock—or by fixing an abstract period, or by counting signals or days.

In the case of the striking clock we shall find no new mental law; we find the same process quite commonly in normal life, it is a result of the association of ideas. The striking of the clock often reminds us of something we wanted to do at that particular time.

The same thing happens when we tie a knot in our handkerchiefs to remind ourselves of something. It occurs to me that I must write a letter to-morrow; I make a knot in my handkerchief to remind myself of it. The knot and the letter are then associated in my consciousness, and when I see the knot the idea of the letter rises from my secondary into my primary consciousness. Memory is caused by association of ideas. Now we see the same thing in the example of post-hypnotic suggestion on p. 142. The striking of the clock made the subject remember to take the water-bottle and walk up and down with it. This process of association is so powerful that it often takes effect even when the suggestion is not punctually carried out.

I hypnotize a man on Saturday and tell him, "When you come in on Tuesday I shall cough three times; you will then give me your hand and remark, 'That is too stupid.'" The man does not come till Thursday, but the suggestion is carried out, merely because I cough.

We will take the second case where an abstract period of time was given instead of a definite sign. Here the idea lay in the secondary consciousness till it resulted in the corresponding action. An approximate but inexact calculation took place in the secondary consciousness.

For this also many analogies may be found in ordinary life. I say to A., "Remind me in an hour to write a letter." A. is busy, and thinks no more of the letter, but nevertheless reminds me of it after some time. But as he has not looked at the clock, he is not punctual: the case is quite analogous to post-hypnotic suggestion, where there is generally no perfect punctuality.

Some people suppose that in the few cases of striking punctuality, some unconscious calculation of time takes place, like the unconscious regularity of our pulse and breathing. However that may be, there are certain persons who can calculate time with some exactitude when they are awake, and others can do the same in sleep; they can wake themselves at a definite time without hearing the clock strike. In any case it is unnecessary to suppose that hypnotic subjects possess a peculiar faculty for fixing time which others do not.

The older mesmerists, Nasse and Eschenmayer for example, made investigations about this faculty of somnambulic subjects for exactly reckoning time. The ancient Hindoos studied it industriously. This subjective faculty for calculating time is sometimes called the mental clock (*Kopfuhr*) (Du Prel).

The third way of fixing time is by counting signals or days (*cf.* p. 142). Gurney's explanation of this is grounded on the division of the consciousness into primary and secondary, which I have explained above.

While the primary consciousness is busy talking to the experimenter the secondary consciousness works on independently. It remembers the command and counts the signals given ; *e.g.*, the shuffling of feet, &c. When the tenth signal is given the suggestion is carried out, just as other suggestions are carried out at an appointed signal (*cf.* the example on p. 142).

Gurney endeavours to explain many long-deferred suggestions in just the same way. As we have seen, in these also the execution of the suggestion may be ordered at the end of a series of days and weeks instead of on a definite date (p. 142). This may be explained in two ways. Perhaps the subject calculates the date after he has been told the number of days or weeks. Against this there is the fact that the subjects, when hypnotized in the intervening time, cannot tell the date. On this account Gurney supposes an action of the secondary consciousness in such cases. He thinks that the subject counts the days in his secondary consciousness just as we consciously count days in waking life, and thus is able to carry out the suggestion. He thinks this all the more likely because when the subjects are hypnotized in the intervening time, they can count the days which have elapsed, and are to elapse, before the suggestion is carried out, though they do not know the exact date.

These different spheres of consciousness enable us to better understand those post-hypnotic suggestions which are carried out in a state of complete loss of memory ; for the suggested command is always accepted, even when the subject remembers nothing about it subsequently. The punctual execution of such a command is only comprehensible if, besides the primary consciousness, a secondary consciousness works intelligently in us.

The preceding explanations are chiefly intended to approximate as much as possible post-hypnotic suggestion to certain habitual occurrences. There is no question of a complete identification of them; for many post-hypnotic suggestions can apparently be distinguished from all known processes of waking life in two ways. The subject does not remember the command when the hypnosis is over; he is apparently unconscious of the idea of executing it; if he is spoken to about it after waking the idea cannot be recalled to his mind; and yet, in in spite of this, it arises at the time fixed. We forget much in ordinary life also; but the recollection of a thing at a certain moment, which no hints or efforts can recall in the intermediate time, appears to me to be the first prerogative of many post-hypnotic suggestions; a second is that it is not the command itself but the idea of its execution which is remembered.

And yet even these striking phenomena are by no means an absolute prerogative of hypnosis. We are reminded, in the first place, of those dominant ideas which are often pathological, and whose origin is for the most part unknown (Bentivegni). These ideas sometimes impel to actions (Krafft-Ebing) which the person concerned becomes under some circumstances powerless to control. Sometimes the origin of the idea is not to be discovered by questions or by any other means. If we hold fast to the principle of Locke, "*Nil est in intellectu, quod non prius fuerit in sensu*," we shall be obliged to suppose that some external event has formerly influenced the mind of the person concerned, but that the event itself is forgotten. None the less, it has an effect, which sometimes takes the form of a dominant idea and sometimes of an action caused by it (murder, suicide,

incendiarism, &c.) (Krafft-Ebing). Here, exactly as in post-hypnotic suggestion, the external prompting impression is forgotten in the intervening time, as well as at the moment when the idea arises or the action is carried out.

But I think that it is not only under pathological conditions that some externally induced idea influences our actions, feelings, &c., without our being able by any means to remember how the idea was, so to speak, implanted in us. Let us suppose that a child two or three years old is often in the society of A. and B; A. is kind and gentle, B hard and unkind, so that the child gradually learns to like A. and dislike B. Let us suppose that the child sees neither for a long time; nevertheless when it does it will still like A. and dislike B. The child, who is now several years older, will not know its own reasons; it will not remember the former conduct of A. and B.; no questions will bring this back to its memory; yet the effect of the old impressions remains, and shows itself in the child's behaviour to A. and B. It is certain that the same thing happens after childhood. Sharp-sighted observers think it likely that a man may owe his preference for a particular profession—painting, for example—to some childish impression, such as dabbling with colours; in this case also the early impression is forgotten by the adult.

Besides, this occurrence is by no means confined to childhood. We are often influenced by unimportant expressions we have heard, though later we cannot trace back the effect to its cause. Our conduct with regard to persons, circumstances, and things is very often the effect of early unconscious impressions.

We now know that those hypnotic states in which there is subsequent loss of memory are by no means unconscious states, but that the impressions received are at the most only sub-conscious. Therefore the fact that the impressions received in hypnosis influence the waking conduct of the subject, though he has forgotten them, need no longer be an enigma to us. Like the waking people in the examples given, he will rather fully assimilate the external influence, will forget it, and act as if spontaneously; or he will yield to an impulse, as in the cases of a dominant idea, without being conscious of its external cause.

I have hitherto spoken only of post-hypnotic movements and actions, and have endeavoured to explain the most important phenomena by means of analogy. I have still a few words to say about post-hypnotic sense delusions, which are less easy to explain. It is true that those which occur in a fresh hypnosis hardly present any substantial difficulty. We have seen that the subsequent loss of memory is only apparent, and that consequently the idea remains in the consciousness, though only in the secondary consciousness. Consequently it is not surprising that the suggested idea should at an appointed time transform itself into a sense delusion in a fresh hypnosis, which fresh hypnosis comes on through association when the idea reappears; we must then explain the sense delusion by means of the dreamc-onsciousness, as I have shown above.

It is quite another thing when the sense delusion appears without a new hypnosis. For example, I say to some one in hypnosis, "When I cough after you wake, you will see a pigeon sitting on the table;

you will remain thoroughly awake." The suggestion takes effect; the subject sees a pigeon where no pigeon is; but it is impossible to make him accept a further suggestion. That one point excepted, he seems perfectly normal. Whether, in spite of this, the total mental state of such people is really normal, will be discussed when we come to the legal side of the question. Bentivegni speaks very clearly on this point. Now, how can we explain this particular sense delusion? We can hardly consider the dream-consciousness its cause, as this apparently is not present while the suggestion is taking effect. But we find like occurrences under different circumstances. I do not mention the hallucinations of insane persons, because it is exactly the addition of other disorders to their sense delusions which distinguishes them from the above case. But we find the same kind of sense delusions under other circumstances in persons who for some reason or other "are disinclined to correct the creations of their own imagination," as Krafft-Ebing puts it. This author mentions the hallucinations of several famous men—the case of Socrates and his Dæmon, and Luther, who threw an inkstand at the devil, &c. Such delusions are often caused by strong expectant attention, of which I have already spoken. This is very clearly seen in spiritualistic manifestations, which may be ascribed in great part to hallucinations of the spectators, who think they see spirits or other things in consequence of abnormal processes in their own brain. Eduard v. Hartmann has carefully discussed the theory of hallucination in spiritualism, though he explains the origin of the hallucinations in a peculiar manner. In any case there are persons who have hallucinations of sight, hearing, &c., without

being hypnotized; they result from a particular mental state which in some cases may be called a state of expectation. It thus appears that the induction of sense delusions by means of post-hypnotic suggestion brings about a mental state when the idea reappears, which has a great resemblance to this state of expectation, and is even perhaps identical with it. In this way, perhaps, these cases of sense delusion may be classed with facts with which we have long been acquainted.

Several attempts have been made to explain hypnosis from the point of view of psychology; but their common defect is, that they try to explain too many different phenomena by attention, the change in which is most striking during hypnosis. I have formerly tried to explain hypnotic phenomena in a like manner. As the different theories referring to this are often met with, I shall develop them further in what follows. The ensuing explanations are not in contradiction with what has been already said, but are, on the contrary, supplemented by it, particularly by a careful consideration of the dream-consciousness.

Susceptibility to suggestion is the chief phenomenon of hypnosis. We have seen how easily a hypnotic suggestion is carried out. The externally suggested idea of a movement induces the movement, the idea of an object causes a corresponding sense hallucination. However strange and paradoxical the phenomena of hypnosis may appear to us at first sight, we may be sure that there is no absolute difference between hypnotic and non-hypnotic states. Psychology has lately shown that a certain degree of susceptibility to suggestion is normal. If A. tells B.

to lift his arm B. is inclined to do it, though he probably controls the impulse by his own will. The following example may make this clearer. When two people look at each other they both often begin to laugh, if one assures the other he is going to laugh. But the idea of laughter is a necessary condition for its appearance, and the stronger the idea the quicker will laughter ensue. We seek to prevent the laughter by arousing in ourselves the contrary idea. Probably many of my readers have made the following observation in their own cases, as I have in myself: when I feel inclined to laugh I can prevent it by causing myself some physical pain, *e.g.*, by pricking myself with a needle. The pain drives away the idea of laughter, and so prevents it. This is an example of the way in which laughter may be prevented by arousing an opposing idea.

Now it appears that this occurs often in ordinary life; the idea of a movement results in a movement (Johann Müller), if it is not opposed by a contrary idea. The idea of a movement called up in a subject in or out of hypnosis has a tendency to induce the movement. But in waking life this idea is made ineffectual by the voluntary idea of the subject that he will prevent the suggested movement; the hypnotized subject cannot do this. Thus in hypnosis certain ideas are inhibited, and even the inhibitory ideas can be inhibited. We have to thank Heidenhain for having first pointed out the importance of inhibitory processes in hypnosis. The case is of course the same with suggested paralyses. Here the idea of inability to move is suggested. In ordinary life we can oppose this and make it ineffectual by means of voluntarily produced opposing ideas; but in hypnosis the suggested idea cannot be supplanted

by the voluntary one, and in consequence the idea of inability to move transforms itself into a real inability.

Let us see if the process in sense delusions can be looked at in the same light. To my mind it is possible. When we hear some one say, "There is a dog," we are inclined to believe it, as I have said above. Our sense perceptions, feelings, and memory pictures prevent the suggested idea becoming a perception, so that we decline to believe in the dog. But in hypnosis the sense impressions do not change into feelings, except such external impressions as the experimenter allows to change into conscious sense ideas; consequently the memory pictures in hypnosis do not follow their normal course and are not justly estimated. The normal course is interfered with. This limitation of the normal course of the ideas allows the idea of the dog to become a perception because the idea cannot be corrected. It is the same with negative hallucinations, which we may consider as caused by the inability of the normal course of ideas to correct the suggestion.

We may, then, consider every hypnosis as a state in which the normal course of the ideas is inhibited. It matters not whether the ideas have to do with movements, or with sense impressions. We have seen that their normal course is always inhibited. In particular, the subject is unable to control the external ideas or to put forward his own; the external ones dominate his consciousness. Psychologically speaking, what we mean by attention is the power of fixing certain ideas in the mind and of working with them. Consequently we may say that there is an alteration of attention in hypnosis.

But attention may be either spontaneous or reflex (Ed. v. Hartmann). When by an act of will we choose

one of several ideas and fix our attention upon it, this is spontaneous attention; but when one idea among several gets the upper hand through its intensity or for some other reason, and thus represses other ideas, and draws exclusive attention upon itself, this is reflex attention.

Now it is only spontaneous attention which is altered in hypnosis, *i.e.*, the subject's ability voluntarily to prefer one idea to another is interfered with, while reflex attention is undisturbed, and it is through this last that a suggested idea, the choice of which has not, however, been left to the subject, comes into prominence. Many investigators conceive hypnotism in this way. The works of Durand de Gros, Liébeault, and more lately of Beard, Richet, Schneider, Wundt, and Bentivegni, are in the main directed to this point.

We may hope besides that further investigations in numerical[1] psychology will throw light upon the state of the attention in hypnosis. Measurements of the time of reaction should be the chief point considered; they have hitherto been undertaken in insufficient number. By time of reaction we mean the time that elapses between the moment of making a sense impression, and the moment when the impression manifests itself by some external sign (Wundt). It is known that a number of different processes take place in the consciousness during the time of reaction. I shall the less enter into them, that the researches which have hitherto been made into the time of reaction during hypnosis have given contradictory

[1] In Max Dessoir's classification of psychology he calls that part which occupies itself with calculating the time of reaction, &c., "numerical psychology."

results. Marie and Azoulay have measured the time of reaction of suggested sense delusions in hypnosis; they found it longer than when the object was a real one. Perhaps this is because the points of recognition (*points de repère*) have to arouse the suggested picture [1] before it can be received. The time of reaction, according to my experience, may last so long—to return to the experiment with the photographs on p. 103—that we might even speak of a search for the picture. The subject looks till he finds the points of recognition, which at once recall the picture to his memory. This search may be united with a dim consciousness on the part of the hypnotic that the whole thing is a delusion. It is quite a mistake to think this search a sign of fraud.

Other experimenters have examined the time of reaction for real objects. Stanley Hall found that for real objects it was considerably shortened in hypnosis. He found before hypnosis, 0·328 seconds; during hypnosis, 0·193 seconds; half an hour after, 0·348 seconds. The time of reaction during hypnosis is thus sensibly diminished here; but William James's experiments have not confirmed Stanley Hall's. He nearly always found an increase of the time of reaction during hypnosis, sometimes to an important extent. He gives this as the average on one occasion: before hypnosis, 0·282 seconds; during hypnosis as much as 0·546 seconds; after hypnosis, 0·166 seconds. But as there are many contradictions in James's different experiments, no conclusion can be drawn. He himself believes that the contradictions are to be ascribed to the fact that so many different states are included

[1] I am doubtful if in this case we ought to talk of time of reaction, as this expression is generally used only with regard to perceptions of real objects.

in hypnosis, and that we should be careful not to generalize from single observations. Beaunis, who has also made these experiments, is just as cautious. The only conclusion he draws from his partly contradictory results is, that the time of reaction in hypnosis may be shortened by suggestion.

It should be already clear from all the foregoing explanations that the phenomena of hypnosis have many more points of contact with ordinary life than would be concluded from the discussions and articles written to satisfy a mere longing for sensation. Some of the phenomena, *e.g.*, motion without will, only appear mysterious on the most superficial observation, for we have seen that an idea of a movement is enough to cause a movement without an act of will. The explanations could only be given in outline, not to lengthen the chapter too much, but they have to a great extent approximated hypnosis to waking life, as well as to the nightly state of dream. The thoughtful reader will have recognized that phenomena which were often considered the prerogative of hypnosis, *e.g.*, the movements without will, appear spontaneously in ordinary life. I will, therefore, here express my conviction that all good observers may find "hypnotic phenomena" in daily life. They result spontaneously from a chance concurrence of the necessary conditions. There are further analogies to hypnosis which can easily be developed out of the preceding discussions, and which I hope to present in the form of a monograph. They would show that *many symptoms of hypnosis often appear spontaneously in ordinary life*, or, what is the same thing, that ordinary life often displays phenomena, which we find again in hypnosis. Hypnosis, or at least many hypnotic states, is merely a means of easily and

safely producing symptoms which, under other circumstances, are not easy to produce because all the necessary favourable conditions do not concur at the same time.

An explanation of one side of hypnosis, *i.e.*, the psychological, has already been given in part, and can in part be deferred for a time. But I do not believe that every one will be content with an explanation in this sense of the word. The physiologists in particular make very different demands. They want an answer to the following questions: 1. What is the state of the central nervous system and the other organs during hypnosis? 2. What is the causal connection between this state and the phenomena of hypnosis? 3. What is the causal connection between this state and the methods which induce hypnosis and put an end to it?

Unluckily the physiology of the nervous system has been built up on such a weak foundation that we can expect no explanation from it at present, or perhaps, as Leixner thinks, for ever. In spite of the great progress which physiology has made, we must admit to ourselves that we know much less about the psychical functions of the different elements of the brain than would appear from our physiological text-books. The hypnotic experiments of which I have spoken will not help us to reach our goal. However carefully such experiments may be made, it would be very daring to draw conclusions from them about mental action in men. Heidenhain believes that hypnosis may be explained by means of experiments on animals, since animals can be hypnotized. But we cannot hope much when we remember that hypnotism is essentially a psychical process.

The investigation of mental processes may, as we have seen, be undertaken in two ways—(1) by observing indviduals, and (2) by calling the subject's memory to our aid. This last could not be done in the case of animals. But any observation of animals must be very elementary ; we can very seldom understand the processes of their consciousness. For these reasons I at present believe that experiments with animals will give us very little help. We may, further, be perfectly sure that the successful electrical stimulation of any portion of the brain does not prove that an act of will originates in that spot. Heidenhain and Bubhoff have made a number of experiments in electrical stimulation of the cortex of the brain on dogs poisoned by morphia. But when these authors draw conclusions about the action of will in men from such experiments, I must pronounce them mistaken till it can be proved that the impulse of the will is an electrical stimulation. For the above reasons I consider Heidenhain's comparison of these experiments on dogs with hypnotic experiments on human beings too hazardous ; no conclusion can be drawn from them.

The attempt to give a physiological explanation of hypnotism on the foundation of our present knowledge of physiology has often been made.

Heidenhain must here be mentioned first, though I believe that Heidenhain's theory is built up on a mistaken premiss. Heidenhain supposes that the cause of the hypnotic state is an inhibition of the action of the ganglion cells of the cerebral cortex, induced by continuous weak stimulation of certain nerves. Heidenhain thinks this inhibition is analogous to reflex paralyses, as in these also the functions

of the ganglion cells are impaired by peripheral stimuli.

But even if we take the inhibition of the action of the ganglion cells for granted, Heidenhain's theory does not explain the connection between this and the means used to induce hypnosis. For (1), according to the views of most authors, mere fixed attention, apart from an idea or representation, will not induce hypnosis; (2) in any case there would be no causal connection here between the purely psychical methods and hypnosis.

Besides this, Heidenhain starts from a mistaken premiss when he supposes an inhibition of the action of the cerebral ganglion cells. He concludes this inhibition from the lowered state of consciousness during hypnosis. But consciousness expresses itself in many ways during hypnosis. The processes of consciousness seem merely to be concentrated on one point, which is removable at the experimenter's pleasure. Heidenhain maintains, like Despine, that the subject is not conscious of the external stimuli. This erroneous view has lately been taken by several physiologists; *e.g.*, by Landois. Heidenhain was led to take it by his almost exclusive observation of the movements of imitation. He supposed that the subject received a sense impression of a movement and copied it, though it did not result in a conscious idea (as in fascination). From what does Heidenhain conclude that the sense impression was unconscious? From the subsequent loss of memory? But he says himself that the subjects often remember what has happened when some hint is given them. Even when this is not the case, loss of memory does not prove that we have to do with an unconscious movement (Forel). Besides, the subjects generally remember in

the hypnosis the imitative movements they have made; they remember them also in later hypnoses, and finally, a suggestion made during the hypnosis will cause subsequent memory.

In 1880, when Heidenhain declared his views about the imitative movements, O. Rosenbach explained that the processes were certainly mental, and not, as Heidenhain thought, unconscious physical reflexes. Unfortunately Rosenbach did not at that time explain his own views in detail. Berger and others agreed much later that these processes were mental. I also was enabled to study the imitative movements. They only take place when the hypnotic subject is conscious of them, and knows that he is intended to make them. If they were unconscious reflexes, the subjects would imitate any person's movements. But they only imitate the one person who exists for them, *i.e.*, the experimenter, and only him when they know they are intended to do so. A clear idea of the movements to be made is the first condition. I do not contest that when such experiments are often made, the imitation may not become mechanical in later hypnoses, as happens in waking life. However, at first a clear idea is necessary; but we regard the cerebral cortex as the seat of ideas, and there is no reason for placing them in another part of the brain in hypnosis; so that there can be no doubt of the inaction of the cerebral cortex. Forel, who is one of the greatest authorities on the brain, also holds this view. But perhaps there are mental processes in the subcortical brain-centres during waking life, about whose extent we know nothing. In any case there is no need to suppose that mental processes in hypnosis take place in another part of the brain than in waking life.

For these reasons I recur to the comparison between hypnosis and the state of Flourens'[1] pigeon when its brain was removed. It sat quite still unless it was touched, when it flew, ran, &c. But some external impulse, some mechanical stimulus probably unaccompanied by an idea, was necessary. For this reason all pigeons behave alike under the circumstances. It is otherwise with the hypnotic subject. He sees the movement he is to imitate; but the stimulus is only effectual when he knows he is to make the movement; if he has seen that another subject did not imitate the movement he also does not do it, because he does not understand the stimulus as a command. It is true that a subject often continues to walk forward automatically when he has once been set going. But this does not prove the inactivity of the cerebral cortex, for he goes on when he believes he is intended to go on; if he continues to take steps automatically, he does it as we do it in waking life; once moving, we go on, paying no attention to our separate steps. This phenomenon, consequently, is no reason for supposing that the cerebrum is less active in hypnosis than out of it. I will take this opportunity to remark that a partially paralyzed person whom I hypnotized, whose *capsula interna* had, in my opinion, been injured by a fit of apoplexy, made no imitative movements in hypnosis with the paralyzed side, any more than out of hypnosis. But in this case exactly that part was excluded in which we place the conscious ideas of movement, *i.e.*, the cerebral cortex; the centres which cause the unconscious reflexes were not excluded. As, however,

[1] Flourens experimented on pigeons, whose cerebrum he had removed. Untouched they remained quiet, but when excited they made all sorts of movements, as if to walk, fly, &c.

there were no imitative movements, this shows that without that part of the brain in which ideas are produced, no imitative movement takes place. None the less, I should as yet hesitate to say that Heidenhain's theory of the inhibition of the cortex was false. I wished only to prove that his reasons do not justify it. I thought these explanations all the more necessary as Heidenhain's supposition that the hypnotic subject is influenced by unconscious sense impression is often accepted. Even such a prominent authority on mental diseases as Mendel has been led astray by this. It is the cause of the mistaken views taken of suggestion, the chief phenomenon of hypnosis. *There is no suggestion without consciousness.* It makes no difference whether the suggestion is made through imitation (imitative automatism) or by a command (the commanded automatism of Heidenhain) (Max Dessoir). Mendel (whose symptomatology of hypnosis by no means corresponds to the facts, according to my experience) maintains that hypnosis is a state "in which consciousness is non-existent for all that takes place in it." I am compelled to reject this view as completely mistaken. My explanations when discussing the consciousness and the memory will have made this clear. I must insist, in opposition to Mendel, that there is consciousness of what is suggested, and that this is the main point in the matter. A suggestion without consciousness is to me inconceivable. I likewise think Bernheim altogether mistaken when he compares certain functions, such as breathing and the action of the heart, which we assume to occur without mental action, to the phenomena of suggestion.

My reasons for not completely rejecting this opinion of Heidenhain and Mendel on the inhibition of the

cerebral cortex are as follows. Although single ideas, single processes of consciousness, are not absent in hypnosis, yet the influence of the will upon their course is limited. According to the present views of physiology the cause of this absence of the power of the will must be sought in a functional disorder of the cerebral cortex.

Cullerre, supported by Ferrier's experiments, thinks there is a functional disturbance in the front half of the cerebral cortex during hypnosis. He thinks that though this is not the seat of the motor centres, the centres here have a regulating influence on the motor centres, but that this influence is removed in hypnosis.

Others do not try to localize the hypnotic subject's loss of will. Dr. J. Hughes Bennett, who, as Preyer tells us, put forward a very interesting physiological theory as early as 1851, is one of these. He recognized more clearly than many present investigators that it is not the genesis of separate ideas which is prevented in hypnosis, but the voluntary synthesis of them. And as the ideas originated in the ganglion cells, Bennett supposed a functional disturbance during hypnosis in the nerve fibres which connect them. We know that these nerve fibres are called the fibres of association.

Jendrássik takes somewhat the same view at the present day. At least he tries to account for hypnosis by a disturbance of the nerve fibres of association.

Other investigators went further; they did not ask merely what parts of the brain are inactive; they tried to find the cause of the inactivity. Naturally, one of the most probable causes was a change of the circulation of blood in the brain. Braid thought of

this, and sought the cause in the altered circulation in the brain and spinal cord. Carpenter supposed cerebral anæmia, as Hack Tuke has more recently imagined a partial spasm of the vessels. Rumpf expresses a like opinion.

Heidenhain also at first supposed that anæmia of the brain was the cause of hypnosis. He soon gave up this opinion, for two reasons. 1. The investigations of Förster with the ophthalmoscope discovered no sort of change in the vessels at the back of the eye during hypnosis. I can confirm this by my own experiments. 2. Heidenhain saw hypnosis appear in spite of inhalation of nitrite of amyl, which causes hyperæmia of the brain. Salvioli and Bouchut have, on the contrary, found cerebral hyperæmia during hypnosis. Tamburini, Seppilli, and Kaan also investigated the circulation of the blood during hypnosis, but only in connection with the three stages of Charcot. They used several methods. 1. Mosso's method, which determines the volume of an extremity, and concludes from a decrease in the mass of blood contained in it, an increase in the mass contained in the brain. 2. The action of cold and hot compresses on the head (Kaan), which cause anæmia or hyperæmia. From the resulting changes, *i.e.*, from the cessation or modification of the hypnosis, a conclusion is drawn as to the causal connection between this and the mass of blood contained in the brain. 3. Ophthalmoscopic investigations of the vessels of the retina. I do not enter into the details of the different experiments, (1) because they are valid for the stages of Charcot alone; (2) because the influence of hypnotic training was not enough regarded; *i.e.*, in the application of warm and cold compresses; (3) because cause and effect are not distinguished clearly enough.

The last point is often overlooked. Even when there is really a change of circulation in the brain it is a mistake in logic to think the changed circulation causes the changed functions. As a muscle needs more blood when it is at work, but does not work more because more blood flows to it; as the stomach when digesting needs more blood than when it is inactive, it is also not improbable that the brain, or portions of it, when they are active, need much blood, and when they are inactive but little. Then if we take the vasomotor disturbances as proved, it is by no means proved whether they are the cause or the effect of hypnosis.

In fact, Cappie takes the opposite view. He thinks that the increased activity of the motor centres in hypnosis draws too much blood to them, thereby causing anæmia of the other portions of the brain which are necessary to consciousness. Of course this is no explanation, apart from the facts that the author arbitrarily opposes the motor centres to the parts of the brain necessary for consciousness, and that there is consciousness in hypnosis. The principle from which Cappie starts is the one put forward by Brown-Sequard. He thinks that hypnotism is a sum of dynamo-genetic and inhibitory acts; *i.e.*, that the increased action of certain parts of the brain (dynamo-genetic act) causes decreased action of others (inhibitory act).

Finally, I mention the theory of Preyer, which is indeed cleverly thought out, but is, as Bottey insists, in no way confirmed; and Bernheim objects that it cannot explain the hypnotic states. Preyer puts the matter thus: An activity of one hemisphere of the brain results in hypnosis; fixed attention causes a rapid accumulation of waste tissues in the parts of

the brain which are active, and by this a quick local consumption of the oxygen of the blood is caused. In consequence of this, favoured by the failure of the ordinary change of stimulus of the nerves of sense, there is a partial loss of the activity of the cerebral cortex. The partial loss of activity of one region would then explain the increase of activity of the other, because the inhibition would disappear. Bernheim justly objects to this that it does not explain a rapidly induced hypnosis, for it is hardly conceivable that waste matter should accumulate so rapidly. But, in particular, the sudden termination of hypnosis is not consistent with this. As we have seen, the one word "wake" is enough to end the hypnosis at once. We should be obliged to suppose that the simple idea of waking was able to dissipate the waste matter or make it of no effect.

I do not think that these physiological theories are satisfactory or even acceptable. As long as the physiologists fail to consider what an enormous influence an idea, roused for example by the word "wake," exercises, their theories will be unable to explain the phenomena. It is by no means necessary to show how the word acts, or why it is enough to put an end to the state. I even think we ought to set our faces decidedly against the way in which certain physiologists play with words, as if the enigma of consciousness were child's play for them. What must a layman think of medicine when certain persons arrange their theories to please themselves and express them with as much confidence as if they had given strict logical proof of them? Lotze is said to have ironically stated that, according to his own statistical reckoning, the great discoveries of physiology had an average

existence of four years (Max Dessoir). This may not be exact. I think better of physiology. But when Mendel, speaking of hypnotism and the phenomena of suggestion, explains that we have to do with a strong stimulation of the cerebral cortex, and Ziemssen declares the exact contrary, *i.e.*, that the cerebral cortex is too little stimulated and the subcortical centres too much, we are startled at such contradictions, and are compelled to hope that in future less will be asserted and more will be proved. Such contradictions as those between Mendel and Ziemssen would be inconceivable if it were not for the presence in their works of just such speculations as those with which medicine is in the habit of reproaching philosophy.

CHAPTER VI.

SIMULATION.

I NOW come to the question of fraud, or simulation. As is well known, hypnosis has only lately been generally recognized. The scepticism which once reigned, and which is an advantage so long as it does not pass into *à priori* prejudice, has been overpowered by facts. But it took some time to attain this result. At present, when it is generally acknowledged that "there is something in it," it is not necessary, when discussing simulation, to consider whether there is such a thing as hypnotism at all. We have only to consider the question of "simulation or hypnosis" for each separate case.

Those who believed in hypnosis were for a long time regarded as deceivers or deceived. It was occasionally less harshly supposed that any man who busied himself with hypnotism must be suffering from some loss of mental health or balance; which was said of some of our best-known investigators. Such personal attacks are sure to be made on men like Forel, Krafft-Ebing, Hirt, Mendel, &c. Less celebrated persons may console themselves that they are in good company. Accusations of deceit, credulity, or madness, are luckily not likely to be made in the future.

In the first place, fraud is much rarer than is generally believed. It has been too much the habit to look for one physical symptom or another, and settle

the question of fraud from its presence or absence. And yet this is exactly the opposite of what is generally done in judging of mental states; *e.g.*, when we want to diagnose a case and decide whether it is insanity or not, no authority on mental disorders would suppose fraud simply because some bodily symptom was absent. He will consider and weigh the case as a whole. Even when each symptom taken separately might be fraudulent they would be weighed against one another and a diagnosis formed from them. If the doctor finds also some symptom which cannot be simulated, he will weigh this too, but he will not conclude fraud from its absence. It is true that in this way the conviction may be only subjective, or rather it will be clear only to those who have studied mental disease. The outsider may often be able to raise the objection that this or that symptom may be feigned. But no doctor of mental diseases would allow himself to be influenced by this.

If we apply this to hypnosis, which is also a mental state, it follows that only he who has studied hypnosis practically is in a position to diagnose it. The idea has gradually grown up that every one is able to judge of hypnotism, and may express his opinion and demand consideration for it, however ignorant he may be about hypnotic experiment. Kron and Sperling have very rightly contested this supposition. It is not correct to diagnose fraud in hypnotism from a certain bodily symptom. Even when each separate symptom may be feigned, the experienced experimenter will diagnose by summing up the different symptoms and comparing their relation to each other. It is satisfactory if he finds an unfeignable symptom besides; this is an objective proof, convincing even to those who have no practical knowledge of hypnosis. But it is

to be said that objective physical symptoms are more seldom found in hypnosis than in mental diseases. The first is a transitory mental state, in which objective physical change is less likely to happen than in mental disorders, which last for months and years.

However, we must of course try to find bodily symptoms in hypnosis. Many authors have done so, among them Charcot in particular, who threw the weight of his name into the scale for hypnotism. The school of Nancy also sought for objective symptoms and found them, though different from Charcot's ; I mean the blisters, &c., produced by suggestion. As a mistaken notion is beginning to take root, that the question of fraud forms the point of difference between the two schools, because that of Nancy had found no objective symptoms, I will here point out the real difference between them.

To exclude fraud we look for symptoms which cannot be voluntarily simulated ; it is indifferent whether these are produced by suggestion or not. Now, there are phenomena which are produced by suggestion and which are independent of the subject's will. And in these the chief difference between the two schools lies.

The Nancy school believes that *all* the symptoms are caused by suggestion, even those independent of the will, while the school of Charcot finds bodily symptoms which are independent of the will and of suggestion. Consequently, *suggestion* is the main point on which they differ.

I shall show that the questions of suggestion and fraud are very different. The case of Siemerling teaches us this. His subject was hemianæsthetic, both with regard to sight and feeling, *i.e.*, the power

of sight was limited on the side on which the skin was without feeling. The field of vision was concentrically narrowed, so that anything beyond a certain distance from the point on which the eyes were fixed could not be seen. Now in hypnosis the sense of feeling on the hemianæsthetic side was restored by suggestion, and directly feeling was restored the eye on the corresponding side became normal, without direct suggestion. Westphal and Siemerling thought this an objective proof of hypnosis, and I also believe that such a proof might satisfy even somewhat strained demands, since the power of sight is independent of the will. And yet this effect was produced only by suggestion, though by indirect suggestion. Krafft-Ebing had a case like this; mental paralyses with objective symptoms were produced by suggestion, and the symptoms were those mentioned by the school of Charcot as happening in mental paralyses.

Objective symptoms can be produced by suggestion. It is doubtful whether they happen without suggestion. We see that the suggestion need not be direct; the symptom may be produced by an indirect and partly unknown mental influence. Siemerling said to his patient, "Now you can feel again"; when the patient recovered sight as well as feeling, this was the effect of an indirect suggestion, induced by a certain mental interdependence between the anasthesia of the eye and that of the skin. Both organs were functionally disordered, and this common disorder disappeared, when the function of one organ was restored by suggestion. Krafft-Ebing's case is like those mental paralyses studied by the school of Charcot. In these, when the subject is told, "Your arm is paralyzed," vasomotor disturbances follow on some mental process, with which we are at present

unacquainted. As the vasomotor disturbance is the direct consequence of the paralysis we are obliged to think that some mental communication causes both phenomena.

To return to the objective symptoms of Charcot. We see that there are certain bodily phenomena in the three stages. Thus the point of difference between the two schools is this: Are these bodily symptoms a result of suggestion or not? I believe (as I said, pp. 82–83) that suggestion plays an important part in most of the symptoms, but I by no means maintain that they have no objective value, though I am not quite sure. For phenomena might be produced by practice, even without hypnosis, which at first sight would seem impossible to simulate (p. 189). This is the point of difference between the two schools. I have discussed it here in order to show that objective symptoms may be caused by suggestion, and that, consequently, the objective symptoms in themselves do not separate the two schools, although the symptoms mentioned by each are rather different.

Let us now ask what symptoms should help us to decide the question of fraud. In the first place we must notice how the eyes close, and how the subject tries to open them. This closing of the eyes is difficult to describe. The gradual falling of the lids is important, and the action of the muscles of the forehead when opening the eyes, in a way like that after sleep, as well as the convulsive rolling upwards of the eyeballs, which is often seen. The fibrillary twitching of the eyelids is, on the contrary, of no importance, as it often happens without hypnosis.

In cases where the eyes are open their expression

is most important. The look is often blank and meaningless, the mask-like expression and the attitude of the subject are often characteristic also. He moves his limbs slowly and heavily when commanded. But I should mention that in certain cases, particularly of light hypnosis, these symptoms are wanting, and the movements in especial are quick and lively. The expression during sense delusions is also very important. Every one knows how difficult it is to place oneself in an imaginary situation so that the expression, the attitude, and the actions should correspond to the idea. This is the great art of actors, and everybody knows how seldom an actor is able to represent a scene by the mere exertion of his own will; but it is still more difficult to change the mood in a moment, and pass from one situation to another in a few seconds. It is extremely difficult for a person awake, but the hypnotic subject does it easily. It is astonishing that outsiders should regard this very ability as a sign of fraud, as a competent judge once did at Vienna (*cf.* p. 165). It is surely one of the most difficult things to do, and it would be wonderful that all the suspected persons should devote themselves to the thankless part of fraud, when with such talents for acting a very different career would be open to them. The expression of pain, the smiles, the chattering of teeth and shivering at different suggestions of pain, pleasure, cold, &c., would be no easy task to the supposed impostor.

The waking in many cases is just as characteristic; the astonished face with which the subject looks round, as if to find out where he is. His behaviour in post-hypnotic suggestion is likewise important.

The impostor generally exaggerates, like a person pretending madness. In spite of the variability of

the symptoms of hypnotism there is a certain conformity to rule in its development. The impostor usually accepts all suggestions very quickly, while the experienced experimenter knows that susceptibility to suggestion increases with a certain uniformity. It is very easy to simulate analgesia to slight feelings of pain, as this analgesia is mistakenly thought to be a common symptom. An unexpected pain causes the usual reflexes in the face and eyes, and yet the impostor will declare that he felt no pain. It is the same with sense delusions, where the suggestion generally requires to be emphasized before it takes effect. The impostor usually exaggerates here also.

Let us consider certain objective symptoms which have been said to be particularly characteristic. Charcot and his pupils lay great stress on the curves of the muscular contraction and respiration in the cataleptic stage. Charcot says there is no essential difference in the duration; a cataleptic person cannot hold up his arm longer than an impostor. But when the curve-tracings from the raised arm and the respiration are noted, there is an important difference; the impostor soon shows that he is tired by irregularity in the arm and respiration curves; the hypnotic subject, on the contrary breathes calmly and evenly from beginning to end and there is no perceptible trembling in his arm.

Other people say that a cataleptic posture is sometimes maintained a very long time, and therefore offers an objective proof.

Charcot mentions increased neuro-muscular irritability as a particular characteristic of lethargy. It is not to be denied that this is impressive when seen for the first time. It cannot for a moment be supposed that a person can thus bring single muscles,

and also groups of muscles supplied by single nerves, into contraction. But these contractions would only be important if they appeared instantaneously from the first.

Charcot does not think that the contractures induced by stimulation of the skin in the somnambulic state are of much value, and in fact they might easily be simulated. Apart from these symptoms of Charcot's stages we must, in judging of fraud, consider some abnormal muscular actions—*e.g.*, the cessation of the uncertain, staggering gait in cases of locomotor ataxy, which Berger described and I also have observed—and other like phenomena.

Binet, Féré, and Parinaud have made particular investigations on the sense delusions of sight. They say that a prism doubles the hallucinatory object as it would a real one; and in hallucinations of colour, the complementary colour is said to be seen afterwards. But Charpentier and Bernheim have refuted these experiments, particularly those with the prism, which from the first seemed very improbable. They showed that the apparent doubling of the hallucination was due to some *point de repère*, which the subject found for himself. He first saw some real object doubled by the prism, and concluded from this that the suggested hallucination should be doubled also. In any case, the great point is that the prism only produces the doubling when a real object can be seen through it. If there is no such *point de repère; i.e.*, if the experimenter is in a dark room, or if he shows the subject a perfectly blank, white screen, the doubling does not happen.

According to Charpentier and Bernheim the experiments with complementary colours were not more exact; and the same is the case with other

experiments of Binet and Féré on colours, from which they drew the conclusion that in suggested perceptions of mixed colours the effect was the same as with real optical images.

The phenomenon presented by the pupil of the eye, which they mention, seems to me more valuable. In suggesting a hallucination, *e.g.*, that of a bird, the suggested approach of the object causes a contraction of the pupil, and *vice versâ*. At the same time there is often convergence of the axes of the eyes, as at the approach of a real object. But it must be remembered that some people are able to produce this phenomenon in themselves by an effort of will (Hack Tuke, Budge).

Bernheim lays great weight on the analgesia of hypnotic subjects. I agree with him. If a completely analgesic subject is touched with a faradic brush he shows no trace of pain. There are no impostors who could repress the expression of pain under these circumstances, particularly if the contact were unexpected. But we must consider that such a high degree of analgesia is very rare in hypnosis. Naturally, this true analgesia must be distinguished from the simulated analgesia, which I mentioned on p. 279. The anæsthesia of the mucous membrane, *e.g.*, of the membrane of the nose, with regard to ammonia, is to be tested. There is no need to say that certain rare phenomena, *e.g.*, secretion of tears and sweat, flushings, changes in the heart's action and organic changes produced by suggestion, are of the highest value. Finally, I shall direct attention to a phenomenon whose absence may be of some importance; I mean the absence of movements which I should prefer to call movements caused by tedium (Langweiligkeit). As is known, a waking

man is unable to retain any posture for a long time, even when all his muscles are relaxed. In the latter case the movements cannot be caused by fatigue of particular muscles; it is rather that when one position is long maintained, a lively feeling of discomfort ensues, that is subjectively felt as tedium. This, it seems to me, induces certain movements difficult to describe, the movements from tedium. Their absence is strong evidence of the presence of hypnosis, and I think this an important and almost unmistakable symptom. They are best observed when the subject has been left for some time to himself.

From two points of view, however, all these symptoms have only a relative value. In the first place their presence is important, and is in favour of hypnosis, but their absence is unimportant. *We are never justified in concluding fraud from the absence of any particular symptom.* In the second place we must consider whether any symptom might not be produced by practice without hypnosis, and whether the subject could use this practice, or whether there may not be a special capacity for the voluntary production of this symptom.

On the first point I should say that in some cataleptic postures there are perceptible tremors, that analgesia is rare, and that neuro-muscular hyperexcitability is but rarely found.

The second point is often overlooked; for it is not yet decided whether by practice some persons might not produce even all the above-mentioned symptoms without hypnosis. Perhaps there is no hypnotic symptom which has not been observed in some person or another without hypnosis. For

example, neuro-muscular hyper-excitability is found in hysterical patients, so that it is not enough to prove hypnosis. And the most strained cataleptic attitudes can be produced by gymnasts, by means of practice. Some persons have been known to influence the action of their hearts without a change of breathing; though, according to Beaunis, a distinction can be found here: the hypnotic obeys suggestion at once, while out of hypnosis a short time must always elapse before the will can exercise its influence.

The local flushings of Mantegazza are a more extreme case. Mantegazza says that at one time in his life he was able to induce local reddening of the skin simply by thinking intently of the spot; he even adds that wheals sometimes appeared. It has often been asserted that people can perspire at any place they please. Delbœuf says that he can influence the secretion of saliva by his will or ideas. It is well known that this last is much under the influence of the ideas.

I have purposely made these remarks, because mistakes about the objective symptoms are made on all sides. For this reason I think that the first question to be decided is the one mentioned above: whether the subject could not produce the symptoms by practice, without hypnosis. I know well that I thus lessen the value of my earlier explanations; but I think it is more honest to say that we do not know enough about the objective symptoms of hypnosis.

I have as yet only spoken of such symptoms as take the form of bodily functions; but according to Pierre Janet these symptoms, contractures for example, are of much less importance to the question of fraud than the mental ones; the memory in particular.

Gurney also thought the memory of great importance here. The postulate from which these authors start is that there is loss of memory after waking from hypnosis, and that consequently the subject remembers nothing that has happened during the state. Now this loss of memory is to be used to decide the question of fraud. An example will make this clear.

I tell X., whom I have hypnotized, that when he is going to bed he is to dip a handkerchief in warm water and tie it twice round his throat. When he wakes he seems to remember nothing about it; upon which I repeat the command, but omit the doubling of the handkerchief. When I ask him what he is to do, he answers, "I am to dip a handkerchief in warm water and wrap it twice round my throat." It will be seen that I gave the order differently before and after hypnosis; yet X. repeats the command as it was given in hypnosis.

According to the views of Pierre Janet and Gurney, this would very likely be a case of fraud; for X., who had apparently completely forgotten everything after waking, yet mentions the one point omitted in the second command. But must we really consider this a case of fraud? I believe not, and I appeal to a long series of experiments with perfectly trustworthy subjects, in whom I often observed objective bodily symptoms also. The subject may very well make such a statement as the above about the twice-folded handkerchief quite automatically, neither remembering nor remarking it; but he may also make it consciously, as a previously forgotten idea may be suddenly called into consciousness by the law of association mentioned on p. 125.

On account of their practical importance I shall speak of other symptoms which, according to experience, are often wrongly considered by outsiders as proofs of fraud. I begin by insisting that there are very few hypnoses which really correspond to the outsider's ideal picture of a hypnosis. At least the inexperienced often think that the apparent impostor is forgetting his part when some symptom appears which, according to them, ought not to appear.

First, the laughter of hypnotic subjects. Of course many subjects laugh, just as a waking man does. In the light stages the subject is quite aware that he is playing a somewhat absurd part, *e.g.*, he makes all the movements of eating an apple, and feels compelled to make them, but knows quite well that he looks rather ridiculous ; therefore it is not odd that he should laugh. But there is often a trace of consciousness even in deep hypnoses ; the subject separates himself, so to speak, into two parts, one of which acts the suggested part and the other observes it and laughs.

I have already spoken of the trembling of cataleptics. I add that the subject sometimes makes movements unforeseen by the experimenter, and which sometimes interrupt the suggestion. I stretch out a subject's arm and suggest that he cannot move it. It remains as I placed it. But now a fly settles on the subject's forehead and he moves his arm at once to rub the place. This is a common occurrence. Rubbing when one is tickled has become a habitual, rapid, unconscious act. So that if the first suggestion has lost its vividness, the new impulse causes a change of posture. I have seen people put their hands to their faces when they sneezed, as we habitually do, though the hands had previously been made motionless by suggestion. Besides, many movements which

have been prevented by suggestion become possible when the subject does not think of the suggestion ; if he is forbidden to say "*a*," he can use it unconsciously ; he only cannot say it when he thinks about it (Laverdant, Hack Tuke, Max Dessoir).

There are many phenomena of this kind. I say to the subject, A., "You are a rope-dancer, and are on the rope." He believes it, and I pretend to cut the rope, on which he falls down ; but he falls so as not to hurt himself. This is caused by a normal, mechanical, nearly unconscious process which is always going on in us. We always use our hands to shield ourselves when we fall. This habitual mechanism works on in hypnosis regardless of the suggestion. Hysterical paralytics for this reason seldom hurt themselves when they fall. Hack Tuke told a subject that he was dead ; he fell without hurting himself.

I will further point out that the eyes sometimes open very quickly. I have seldom seen this, but can safely assert that it happens in genuine hypnoses. An impostor will also often open his eyes when he thinks he is not observed ; the hypnotic subject does it whether he thinks he is observed or not. I must also direct attention to those sense delusions in which a dim dream-consciousness persists, which prevents the full effect of the delusion. In such cases fraud is often suspected ; *e.g.*, the case mentioned on p. 183, where the subject fought with an enemy, taking pains not to hit him.

Further, a complicated suggestion may be misunderstood or half-forgotten, in which case it will be carried out imperfectly. A post-hypnotic suggestion can naturally only be fulfilled when it is remembered. As memory is the first condition for the success of a suggestion, a person with a good memory (*ceteris*

paribus) will execute a suggestion better than another. If the post-hypnotic suggestion is badly remembered it will be badly carried out, as the memory only acts in a natural way. I mention this though it seems a matter of course, because I have heard the existence of hypnosis doubted, purely in consequence of such mistakes. To a man whom I have hypnotized in the presence of A., B., C., and D., I make the post-hypnotic suggestion that when A. speaks he is to say "Ha!" when B. speaks, "He!" when C. speaks, "Hi!" and when D. speaks, "Ho!" It is not surprising that he is confused in carrying out the suggestion, and makes the wrong exclamation to each person. For all depends upon the strength of the memory, and its power to retain and reproduce the suggestion.

Finally, a subject will sometimes confess to imposition, or to having acted to please others. Such a confession must be judged with caution. Many who have made hypnotic experiments have observed that subjects will often say after the hypnosis that they have been pretending, though their actions were really compulsory. I need not say that there are people who think they show weakness of will by allowing themselves to be hypnotized; then they consciously tell untruths. Another group is more interesting psychologically. Their self-deception is the same as we have found in some cases of post-hypnotic suggestion. They think they could have acted otherwise if they had pleased (F. Myers). Heidenhain mentions such a case; a doctor said, after the hypnosis, that he could have opened his eyes if he had pleased; but when the hypnosis was renewed he could no more help himself than the first time. I could add a number of personal observations. One case was that of a doctor, who often asserted

after the first hypnosis that he could have behaved otherwise; but in each fresh hypnosis his will was inhibited. Finally he himself became aware of his loss of will-power. In another case I hypnotized X at least ten times before he would agree that the suggested paralysis of his arm had really made him unable to move it; he previously believed that he had so behaved to oblige me.

All this makes it evident how difficult it is to decide the question with regard to fraud. It seems to me to occur more often with children, but the transition from simulation to true hypnosis is so gradual that even an experienced experimenter is sometimes uncertain. For example, when a subject shuts his eyes to be obliging, it is not the same thing as if he shut them to deceive; or he shuts them because he is tired of fixing them on something, but could open them by a strong effort, though he keeps them shut because it is more comfortable. It would be a great mistake to identify this with simulation. Others do what the experimenter wishes, to please him, but not to deceive him. This is not pure fraud either, for the wish to deceive is absent. And there is another complication; for people in hypnosis sometimes pretend, just as it is known insane persons do. Thus a hypnotic will say he sees something when he does not. It is naturally very difficult to say where deceit begins and ends in such a case; but, generally speaking, practice will enable us to judge the mental state of the subject with some certainty. There is no doubt that even the most experienced deceive themselves or are deceived; the most experienced doctor of mental diseases is in the same case. But as he learns to diagnose by experience so will the experi-

menter in hypnotism. The fear of being deceived has prevented many from interesting themselves in the subject. But no advance can be made unless the fear is put on one side and the question examined. It is possible to maintain a complete scientific reserve. The question of fraud must be treated in a scientific manner, as mental diseases are treated. We must not make impossible demands in order to exclude imposition; to do so would prove neither scepticism nor a scientific spirit; it would, on the contrary, be unscientific. And yet I have heard a "cultivated" man, who thought himself scientifically sceptical, say, when watching a hypnotic subject, that he would believe in the reality of the hypnosis only if the subject could see through a non-transparent substance; *e.g.*, if he could see through a man as if he were glass!

CHAPTER VII.

THE MEDICAL ASPECTS OF HYPNOTISM.

IT is certain that the present interest in hypnotism depends chiefly upon its therapeutic utility, although its value for experimental psychology must not be underrated. The attention of doctors has never been directed to it so much as at present; in spite of all differences, it becomes more and more clear in medical circles that a thorough examination of it is necessary.

We have already seen that Bernheim and Liébeault think that hypnotism means suggestion, and suggestion is truly the chief agent in it. Bernheim's definition of hypnotism makes its therapeutic value more comprehensible. He believes that hypnosis is a particular mental state, in which susceptibility to suggestion is heightened. It follows from this that suggestibility exists apart from hypnosis, and that consequently there is no contradiction between the therapeutics of suggestion in, and out of, hypnosis; one is the natural complement of the other. It is the school of Nancy which has pointed out that there are many suggestions without hypnosis, and it was the first of all to recognize the therapeutic value of purely empirical suggestion.

The therapeutics of suggestion are founded on the

premiss that a number of diseases can be cured or relieved merely by making the patient believe he will soon be better, and by firmly implanting this conviction in his mind. Every able practitioner knows this suggestive treatment, which is as old as disease. Most of the miraculous cures one hears of may be referred to it; at present we may consider them the results of empirical and often unconscious suggestion. We can refer many of the results procured by the mesmerists to the same cause. It is known that when Bailly wrote his report, in 1784, he thought of the power of imagination, to which he ascribed Deslon's phenomena. From ancient times this mental influence has been used. Ancient medicine, which was partly in the hands of the priests, and in which many religious ceremonies were used, is full of this mental influence. The temple sleep of the old Greeks and Egyptians was a means to facilitate the effect of suggestion. The sick lay down to sleep in the temple, and were told by the god in dreams of something that would cure them. We find the same kind of thing again and again. The belief in some particular medicine is an important agent in healing. There is no need to recount the miraculous deeds of each century. But in later times I may mention the well-known Greatrakes, whose cures astonished all England in the seventeenth century, and Gassner, the exorcist, at the end of the last. The reports upon them make it clear that Gassner used suggestion; for though he spoke Latin, it is evident that he made his patients understand him; nobody misunderstood his famous "Cesset"; they knew that the pain, &c., was ordered to stop. I was interested to find in Sierke that Gassner once sent a patient to sleep by command. He told her to sleep, and when to wake,

and in fact induced what we should at present call a hypnosis.

Among other wonder-workers I may mention Prince Hohenlohe, at the beginning of this century; a Catholic priest, who aroused much attention by his cures in Bavaria, after 1821. The mesmerists supposed he was one of those persons who possessed a peculiar force, while on other sides religious faith was called in as an explanation. One school of mesmerists, that of Barbarin, of Ostend, took up an odd middle position. Barbarin maintained that the influence was a purely spiritual one, and that the right way to induce sleep was to pray at the patient's bedside (Perty). Even to-day many adherents of vital magnetism hold like views; for instance, Timmler thinks religious faith valuable and necessary for obtaining the result.

I will not multiply examples of suggestive therapeutics. I will but mention the authenticated cures which have occurred at Lourdes and other holy places quite recently. Everywhere and in all times suggestion has been effectively and unconsciously used. When we see that it is exactly those people who use suggestion who are the most successful, we are justified in giving it a high place in modern therapeutics. For no one who reads the stories with unprejudiced mind can doubt that Gassner and many others were more successful than many a scientific physician; though they are unjustly called swindlers. It may be that some of the diseases were hysterical, but there were many others. It is at least certain that nearly all of them were diseases which the usual medicinal treatment had failed to heal. As has been explained, if suggestion is to succeed the patient must firmly believe he will be cured. This belief

must be impressed upon him, and the question is how this can most surely be done. Any patient who goes to Lourdes with the certain belief that he will be cured, and whose expectation has been redoubled by the reports of others and his own faith as a Catholic, will obtain quite a different result from the man who goes without faith.

It is not always possible for a doctor to implant this idea, however great his patient's faith in him may be. Hypnotism is a means of attaining this end, in spite of opposition. No patient, be he ever so intelligent, can resist the influence of hypnotic suggestion if only the hypnosis is deep enough. An idea implanted in hypnosis takes root like a dogma in a faithful Catholic. The idea of a cure should be instilled into the patient during hypnosis. If it is allowed that the idea of a cure effects a cure in many cases there can be no doubt that suggestion is an integral part of therapeutics.

We have to thank Liébeault, of Nancy, for having been the first to use suggestion methodically in therapeutics. It is true that verbal suggestion was occasionally used by the old mesmerists, Kluge, Lausanne, Jobard, and others, as Du Prel and Pick justly point out. But method was entirely wanting. It is often maintained that Braid recognized the value of suggestion in medicine, but this is an error. It is clear that Braid saw suggestion, but he did not recognize it. Whoever will take the trouble to read his works will find that he did not try to find the therapeutic value of hypnotism in suggestion. He believed rather that certain methods of inducing catalepsy, &c., influenced the distribution of blood, and he thought it likely that there were nervous changes.

I must not forget to notice that in 1880 Friedberg, and more especially Berger, concluded that hypnosis was a therapeutic agent. Berger saw a hemiplegic patient make movements in hypnosis which he could not make awake. He saw sufferers from locomotor ataxy cease to stagger during hypnosis and for a short time after. It is true that he did not use hypnosis systematically. The simplified method of Liébeault was unknown to him; he knew nothing of the Nancy methods, nor of verbal suggestion, nor of the great importance of suggestion. Many people, unknown to Liébeault, had seen that, from a medical point of view, a state in which contractures and paralyses, analgesia and pain, &c., could be induced and removed, must be of immense importance; but Liébeault was the first to find the right path, while Bernheim and Forel developed the methods and made them known to physicians. Liébeault must be regarded as the true founder of systematic suggestion.

It is not astonishing that objections have been made to the therapeutic use of suggestion. No essential progress has often been made in the science of medicine without a struggle. Every one knows how the use of quinine, and vaccination, and particularly of emetics, especially in France, was contested; and how the cold-water cure was rejected, and how Remak was attacked in Germany before the galvanic battery was accepted in the medicine-chest. Every one knows how *massage* was laughed at. And all these methods have finally succeeded, in spite of opposition and childish laughter.

The difficulty of judging of the therapeutic value of hypnosis is much increased by the hazy definition

of "hypnotic suggestion." Thus, some oppose suggestive treatment, and some hypnotic suggestive treatment, while others object sometimes to suggestion in general and sometimes to hypnotism, *e.g.*, Ewald, Mendel, S. Guttmann. I think that the latter are right, in spite of their false point of view, because it is impossible to draw a sharp line between suggestion and hypnotism. I refer to the discussions in Chapters iv. and v., and again express my opinion that hypnotism and suggestion will be gradually welded into one, because spontaneous transitory hypnoses appear to be often found in ordinary life.

It has often been asked why so many authorities have pronounced against suggestive therapeutics. There are three answers—(1) Even an authority may be wrong, and generally it is the authority which believes in its own infallibility; (2) all so-called authorities are not necessarily authoritative; (3) many who are authorities in one field are just for that reason not so in another. The last two points are important in medicine, and we may consider them further.

In all sciences, besides the real authorities, there are men who are mistakenly supposed to be so. It is interesting to observe in the history of culture how fashion makes "authorities" out of those who have no real scientific greatness. A man is called an authority; but when it is asked what he has done there is shrugging of shoulders, for often he has done nothing. Such pseudo-authorities are much inclined to pass judgment on questions they have not examined. There have always been such persons; they are the drag on the wheel of science. Their position and credit is due to a faculty, which a clever writer, Karl von Thaler, a short time ago called the art of putting oneself on the stage. Their judgments are of no value.

But I do not mean to say that all who have opposed the therapeutic use of hypnotism are pseudo-authorities; on the contrary, true authorities, such as Meynert and others, have expressed themselves decidedly against it. But as regards the third point above-mentioned, I will say that because a man is

an authority on one matter it does not follow that he has a right to claim authority on another. A great historian or astronomer is not in a position to pass judgment on medicine. Now, many of those who have objected to the therapeutic use of hypnotism are authorities on matters that have nothing to do with therapeutics. Physicians as well as laymen often lose sight of this. A man may be eminent in the histology of the brain, and yet be incompetent in therapeutics. And there is nowadays no more connection between the art of healing and the histology of the brain than there is between it and astronomy. If I may call the art of healing a science, the histology of the brain is something quite apart from it—at least, in the present day. Perhaps a connection between them may be discovered later; perhaps the histology of the brain may be of use to the science of healing; but at present there is no such inner connection. Therefore I consider the judgment of a man who may be an authority in his own branch as of little weight here as the judgment of an astronomer would be. I would on no account have it thought that I depreciate the investigations of such men. On the contrary, investigations on the histology of the brain, for example, are necessary and immensely valuable; but as yet they have not affected the art of healing. Whether they ever will the future will show. Feuchtersleben, whom no one will accuse of dislike to medicine or anatomy, since he was their most ardent admirer, has expressed the opinion that the art of healing should not be confused with the knowledge of anatomy.

Besides, scientific opposition has always advanced science. A serious, unprejudiced opposition prepares the way for a scientific investigation of new questions; only the investigation must be permitted, not rejected *à priori*, as was done in some quarters in the case of hypnotism.

Every investigator should test as a matter of course, if he wishes to judge clearly. But unluckily this is not done. When the author demanded such an examination, that the value of hypnotism might be tested, many scientific investigators protested against

the demand in the most energetic way. He simply asked in several reports that the therapeutic use of hypnotism should be examined—a demand which may justifiably be made to men of science. While Virchow, &c., considered a long and thorough examination necessary, others were already prepared with an *à priori* judgment, for which they could not offer a shadow of reason. But, indifferent to condemnation, new observers came forward to test the healing power of hypnotism and of the suggestion and mental treatment so closely connected with it. When it became evident that the question could not be easily put aside, and it was recognized that the absolute refusal to examine was unscientific, an endeavour was made to support the original *à priori* decision by false assertions. Those who had first defended the therapeutic value of hypnotism were accused of having asserted the discovery of a universal panacea. It is a pity that those who, as the representatives of science, ought to seek for truth, should take such a way of justifying their original refusal. These tactics are pitiable, and deserve to be branded. Neither the serious investigators at Nancy nor those in Germany, Switzerland, and Austria, have ever wished to make a universal panacea out of hypnotism.

We will consider singly the objections made to hypnotism as a therapeutic agent.

A chief objection was made by Ewald, of Berlin, who "decidedly protested against calling suggestion medical treatment." He did this in the interest of physicians. Forel's reply to him will make it clear what he meant. It refutes his objections better than I could do.

"Ewald protested against the expression 'medical

treatment by hypnotism.' He said that medical treatment meant the medical art and medical knowledge, and that every shepherd-boy, tailor, and cobbler could hypnotize; only self-confidence would be necessary. I, for my part, think it right to protest against this way of treating a scientific question. Has not medicine drawn a countless number of its remedies from the crudest empiricism, from the traditions of the 'shepherd-boys'? Cannot every cobbler inject morphia, apply blisters, and give aperients if he has the material? Yet we do not despise these remedies, nor baths, nor massage, &c. But Prof. Ewald deceives himself greatly if he believes that a delicate agent like hypnosis, which affects and modifies the highest and most refined activities of our minds, could be manipulated by a shepherd, or ought to be handed over to him. Medical science and psychological knowledge, the ability to diagnose and practise, are all necessary to its use. It is true that laymen have succeeded with it, just as charlatans have succeeded, and continue to succeed, in all provinces of medicine. Should we on that account leave the practice of medicine to them? Long enough, much too long, science has left the important phenomena of hypnosis to 'shepherd-boys and their like'; it is high time to make up for the delay, and to devote ourselves to a thorough examination of the series of phenomena which can complete our views of psychology and of the physiology of the brain. Medical therapeutics must not remain behind when great result are to be obtained. But these results can only be obtained by a thorough study of the proper hypnotic methods."

A second objection is the danger of hypnosis. I long ago pointed this out, and earnestly warned

people not to consider hypnosis absolutely safe. Mendel and others have said the same thing later, but have somewhat exaggerated the danger. This point must be seriously weighed. But it is never asked whether a remedy might not be dangerous; we only ask if we cannot avoid the danger by careful and scientific use of it. Rust asserts, in speaking of artificial somnambulism, "the best assertion that can be made about a remedy or method of cure, is, that it might also do damage; for what can never do positive harm can never do positive good." This assertion is to a great degree justifiable, though perhaps exaggerated; for I think I may say that there are few remedies in medicine which would not injure if carelessly and ignorantly used. There are even medicines which may injure, however carefully used, because we do not know exactly under what conditions they become hurtful I need not speak of morphia, strychnine, and belladonna, which have sometimes done injury even when the maximum dose was not surpassed, nor of the deaths from chloroform, the reason of which has not been explained. Thiem and P. Fischer, with praiseworthy scientific frankness, have quite recently published a case of the fatal after-effects of chloroform; death followed on the fourth day. These authors say that there is at least one death for every thousand administrations of chloroform. Neither will I speak of the dangers of surgical operations; I need only point out that an apparently harmless medicine may have very likely already done more mischief than hypnotism. Many deaths have resulted from the use of potassium chloride, and unfortunately this drug can still be bought in retail without a medical prescription. Severe collapse has been observed after

the use of antipyrine. I will add to these one of the most recent medicines—sulfonal—which is supposed to be a perfectly harmless hypnotic drug. A friend and colleague has told me that he has seen sad consequences follow from its use, and that there were some patients to whom he never gave it, for fear this "harmless" drug should work great mischief. And again, as to the treatment by suspension, which has lately become almost a fashion, and from which certain enthusiasts really expect the cure of locomotor ataxy. It is now certain that it may cause great injury, or even death; a death from it has recently been published. Many published reports show that even the presence of a doctor does not prevent evil consequences. And Billroth has lately pointed out great dangers from carbolic acid, which is constantly used. If we gave up the use of these remedies we might give up medicine altogether, as everything employed may do harm.

I need not enlarge this chapter further, for whether there are dangers in the use of drugs or not, is not the question. Rather we must ask: 1. Do we know under what conditions the danger appears? 2. Can we remove these conditions and the consequent danger? 3. And if we cannot, does the advantage to be gained by the patient outweigh the danger he runs? The answer to these questions is in favour of hypnotism; we know perfectly well under what conditions it is dangerous, which we do not know about some drugs; we are able in certain cases to exclude these conditions by using the proper and harmless methods, and thereby preventing danger; and supposing that these perfectly harmless methods fail, we can ask ourselves if we shall or shall not use the methods which are not harmless. I think the small

discomforts to which the patient is exposed—a short headache, watering of the eyes, and depression, are infinitesimal compared to the advantages which may result from the hypnosis. The future will decide here also, but I will remark that nearly all the men (Gilles de la Tourette, Ewald, Mendel, Rieger, Binswanger), who have said the most about the dangers of hypnotism, and are in general against it, by no means themselves refrain from hypnotizing. By this they allow that it is not hypnotism itself, but its misuse, which is mischievous.

I will now speak of the different ways in which hypnotism might endanger health, and explain the causes of the danger, and the method of avoiding it.

In the first place, the danger has been enormously exaggerated. The inhabitants of a little town once left off eating potato soup because a woman fell downstairs and broke her neck half an hour after eating some. Conclusions have been drawn in the same way here, and this sort of reasoning is not uncommon. If a person was hypnotized, and later on had some ailment or other, straightway the ailment was ascribed to hypnotism. If we reasoned thus we should have to say that Carlsbad causes apoplexy, for Mr. X. had an attack of apoplexy a fortnight after he returned from Carlsbad, &c. Many things could be proved in this way.

I should hardly have thought it possible that such logic should be used in scientific circles. It is true I have often heard that when patients come back from a watering-place without having been cured — which must happen sometimes — they are dismissed with the comforting assurance that they will feel the effects later. Till now I thought this was a bad joke, or at best an effort to console the

patient; I never believed that such a principle was really credited in the medical world. If a patient got better or worse six months after his return from a watering-place, I should not be inclined to ascribe the effect to the baths, because in the interval other things might have affected the patient. Like Pauly, I must on these grounds reject the connection found by Binswanger, Ziemssen, and others, between hypnosis and ailments long subsequent to it. Besides, if I were to accept their sophisms, it would be easy for me to prove in the same way that modern medicine makes mankind ill; for what medicine might not produce important results half a year after its administration? What doctor has ever argued in this way?

However, I by no means deny that there are certain dangers in the improper use of hypnotism.

Mendel maintains that it induces nervousness; that nervous people grow worse, and sound people nervous through its use; but Forel and Schrenck-Notzing think this is a mistake of Mendel's, caused by his using the method of Braid instead of suggesting hypnosis verbally. I agree that fixed attention too long continued may have unpleasant effects. It may be followed by nervous debility or nervous excitement. But I have never seen any one become "nervous" whom I hypnotized verbally, and to whom I made no exciting suggestions. This also is important (Bertrand). Whoever has seen the difference between a subject who has received an exciting suggestion and one who has received a soothing one, will agree that as much good can be done in one way as harm in the other. A man who makes absurd suggestions to amuse himself and satisfy his curiosity, without a scientific aim, need

hardly be astonished if he produces ailments. Sawolshskaja is right in warning against such sports. I have observed that patients are often worse on days following bad dreams. Can we be astonished that a person who has awaked from hypnosis during an imaginary fire should feel ill after it? Such suggestions should not be made at all, or with the greatest caution, taking care to do away with the suggestion and soothing the subject before the waking. This is the most important point. I think that even if these mistakes are made it is of little consequence, provided the subject is thoroughly and properly wakened in the manner used at Nancy and by all who follow the prescriptions of that school. I should like to ask those who talk of the dangers of hypnotism if they have taken care that the awakening should be complete? I know that most people are not at all aware that they should do away with the suggestion entirely. They think it enough to blow on the subject's face, and are astonished that he does not feel well after it. I am surprised that more mischief is not done in consequence of insufficient technical knowledge. It is this that is dangerous—not hypnotism. No wonder that there are sometimes unpleasant consequences. It is as necessary to know the right way in this case as in using a catheter.

To show how a suggestion should be done away with I will suppose that an exciting suggestion has been made to a subject, who is disturbed in consequence. One should say something like this: "What excited you is gone; it was only a dream, and you were mistaken to believe it. Now be quiet. You feel quiet and comfortable. It is easy to see you are perfectly comfortable." Only when this has suc-

ceeded should the subject be awakened ; and this should not be done suddenly ; there are reasons for thinking it better to prepare the patient for waking (Sallis). I generally do it by saying, "I shall count up to three. Wake when I say three." Or, "Count to three, and then wake." I add (and this is also important), "You will be very comfortable, happy, and contented when you wake."

Further on I will give some other precautionary rules which should be used before the awakening to prevent disagreeable consequences.

I have spoken of the nervousness which hypnotism is supposed to produce, and have tried to show that it is not hypnotism which causes it, but its improper use. These rules should especially be followed : 1. To avoid continuous stimulation of the senses as much as possible. 2. To avoid all mentally exciting suggestions as much as possible. 3. To do away with the suggestion carefully before the awakening. The proper method will not cause nervousness. Hypnotism offers less dangers on this point when properly used than electricity, for example, which has made many people "nervous." A lady I knew became so nervous when electricity was applied to her larynx by a very competent doctor, that she was obliged to give it up.

It is asserted in particular that hypnotism causes hysteria, or hysterical convulsions (Guinon), even in people who have never had them. It is not to be denied that hystero-epileptics are sometimes thrown into hysterical convulsions in hypnosis, but I contend decidedly that the convulsions are not caused by the hypnosis. The slightest mental affection causes convulsions in such persons : electricity causes them ; they fall into them even when they hear a noise, such as a falling book, a bell, &c. But it is preposterous

to say the electricity causes the convulsions; the mental excitement of the patient about the electrization is the real cause; timid patients sometimes faint when they are electrified (E. Remak). Besides, the main point is whether the convulsions of the hystero-epileptic are permanently aggravated or not, and experience shows that this is not the case. On the contrary, when once a complete hypnosis has been obtained we have in our hands a trustworthy means of permanently lessening the convulsions; and, in truth, an attack of hysteria is not so important that it need be regarded as one of the chief dangers of hypnotism. Hysterical attacks are sometimes artificially induced merely for the sake of experiment or demonstration.

Certain cases of Sperling and Krakauer show that hysterical attacks are of no importance, and do not indicate the necessity of stopping the hypnotic treatment; in these cases there were attacks at first, yet cures were obtained; and they also show that the attacks are by no means permanently aggravated, even when they take place at the first or second attempt to hypnotize. If Krakauer, in his case of hysterical deafness, had allowed himself to be thus hindered from making further experiment his patient might be as deaf to-day as she was two years ago. And I will further mention that Mesmer and Deslon even thought the hysterical convulsions (*crises*) necessary if the magnetizing were to do any good; which was certainly a mistake. So far as I know, in no single case has a person hypnotized according to the above rules ever had convulsions in hypnosis, unless he had had them before.

But I should like to mention some slight accompanying ailments which are sometimes found after

hypnosis, though they cannot be tnought a real danger, and are often the result of auto-suggestion (Forel), or of a bad method. There may be fatigue and languor, heaviness of the limbs, &c., after waking. It is easy to prevent these by suggestion in deep hypnoses. It is different in the light ones, though I believe a clever operator can do it by post-hypnotic suggestion even here. In other cases I think it better to prevent fatigue by suggestion before the awakening; in any case it is a good plan to get rid of it at the first sitting, as otherwise it increases by auto-suggestion at each sitting, and can finally be hardly overcome. This feeling of fatigue in the light hypnoses is the same we sometimes have after an unsound sleep. All these inconveniences are slight, and can for the most part be avoided. Drosdow made of these phenomena a particular stage of the hypnotic state, characterized by headache, pains in the limbs, faintness, &c., but he was no doubt misled in 1881 by the then want of knowledge of the methods of Nancy.

The main dangers of hypnotism are not those just mentioned, which appear relatively seldom even when improper methods are used. The real ones show themselves more easily in such a case. They are: the increased tendency to hypnosis, and heightened susceptibility to suggestion in the waking state, *i.e.*, the possibility of a new hypnosis against the subject's will, perhaps without his suspecting it (*cf.* p. 45), and the danger of his accepting external suggestions even without hypnosis. It is just this too great susceptibility to hypnosis which shows us how careful we should be with the method of Braid, which is the most frequent cause of this; for accidentally fixing the eyes on some object may cause a sudden hyp-

nosis, simply because the idea of an earlier hypnosis is thereby vividly recalled.

The last-mentioned danger can be guarded against by repeatedly making some such suggestion as follows to the subject before awaking him: "Nobody will ever be able to hypnotize you without your consent; you will never fall into hypnosis against your wish; nobody will be able to suggest anything to you when awake; you need never fear that you will have sense delusions, &c., as you do in hypnosis, you are perfectly able to prevent them." This is the surest way to avoid the danger. Such are the dangers of hypnotism, and such the methods of meeting them Their antidote is suggestion, and they are no hindrance to hypnotic treatment. They can be avoided by a proper use of hypnotism.

But it may be objected that though a short use of hypnotism may not be hurtful, a long one, involving a repeated induction of the state, might be so. The objection is justifiable. But it might also be made against the use of various drugs, since we do not yet know whether a long use of them might not cause severe chronic poisoning. Experience is the only way to decide such questions. Now Liébeault, who has used hypnotism therapeutically in France for nearly thirty years, has watched cases for a long time, without finding bad consequences. Forel has done the same thing, though for a rather shorter time; I myself have hypnotized persons for more than a year without evil results. On the contrary, the hypnosis grew deeper, and suggestion consequently easier.

I will not enter into a purely theoretic discussion of the dangers of hypnosis. Mendel fears over-action of the cerebral cortex from it, while Ziemssen and Meynert fear just the contrary, that is, a loss of

power of the same part. The contradictions in which they are involved are evident; to suppose that they meant the same thing would show a great want of reflection.

In the foregoing I have discussed and refuted two objections made to the therapeutic use of suggestion and hypnotism: first, the assertion that hypnotism should not be called medical treatment; and secondly, that it has too many dangers to allow of its practical use.

It is further added that its mysterious side should prevent its being used. Benedikt maintains this, and thus contradicts Mendel, who finds its healing value especially in the mysterious impression it causes. I, on the contrary, believe, as I shall explain later, that the mysterious impression plays a subordinate part, and that there is less mystery about the matter than is generally believed. Apart from this, it would be perfectly indifferent to a practitioner whether a drug took effect from the mysterious impression it made, or through suggestion, or through chemico-physical influence. The point is that it shall act, not in what manner it acts.

When Benedikt maintains that, in order to lessen the impression of mystery, hypnosis should be induced by the use of a magnet instead of the ordinary methods, he would do better if he showed how this is possible. He should prove his assertion that the magnet produces hypnosis by publishing his experiments. I have applied the magnet to hundreds of persons and never induced hypnosis.

If I believed that in some cases a mysterious agent would be useful to the patient I should not for a moment hesitate to use it; for were I to do otherwise I should be neglecting my duty as a doctor,

which is of more importance than any scientific sign-board. For example, I should think it right in certain cases to send patients to some miracle-working spot, *e.g.*, Lourdes, if they expected they would be cured there; and, in fact, fifty or sixty patients are yearly sent to Lourdes from the Salpêtrière (Constantin James). In any case, even if hypnosis was effectual only from its mysteriousness—which is not the case—it would none the less be well to use it.

Among the remaining objections to suggestive therapeutics the assertion that they do not produce any lasting improvement or cure may be mentioned. This may be answered as follows. The results are by no means transitory; on the contrary, a large number of lasting cures have been observed and published. The author has seen many cases where there was no relapse for years. One cannot ask for more. The objection that the improvement may be only temporary is thus not justified. But even were this so we must still rejoice to have found a way of procuring even temporary relief (Purgotti, Schuster). For instance, in difficulties of menstruation, it is a great thing if we can succeed in subduing pain for a time. If the pain returns a new hypnosis may be induced; it is always to be had, and as it generally becomes deeper the more it is used, it is less likely to lose its effect (even in relapses) than drugs, which often do so quickly (Sperling). In any case therapeutics are not yet so far advanced as to give us the right to reject a remedy merely because it only affects symptoms or has often merely a temporary value. If we were to reject remedies which suppress the phenomena of disease for a time only, we might abandon a large part of therapeutics, perhaps the whole. Besides, from some methods of treatment

nothing but a temporary improvement is expected, and yet this temporary improvement is considered to prove the value of the method. How often it happens that a patient who has benefited by a stay in Carlsbad or Aix, &c., is recommended by his doctor to go back there when his ailment returns, because his health was improved the first time. Remedies should not be weighed and measured by different standards.

Another objection to the therapeutic use of hypnotism is that it cannot be generally applied because everybody is not hypnotizable. I should like to add that in many cases, even when a hypnosis is induced, it is not deep enough to be used therapeutically. I pointed out these two defects several years ago, without, however, exaggerating their importance. After all, it is the same with other remedies. For instance, under some circumstances a journey to the North Sea, or among mountains, or, perhaps, in some states of collapse, a few bottles of Madeira, are supposed to be excellent remedies. I think that many more people can be hypnotized than can be sent to bathe in the North Sea.

A further objection to treatment by hypnotic suggestion is that there may be suggestions without hypnosis. But this is exactly the standpoint which the school of Nancy and I myself have always taken up, although, as I have pointed out, it is often difficult to distinguish between hypnosis and suggestion. This is the heart of the present movement, which shows us how extensive is the empirical use of suggestion in therapeutics. It is also the real reason of the strong opposition to hypnotism. We hereby see how often suggestion occurs spontaneously in ordinary life and medical practice. Hypnotism, by means of which we can make suggestions artificially, shows us what a

great mistake has been made in estimating previous therapeutics, since we have neglected to consider the mental element in the action of the various drugs. The physiological effect only was regarded; it was quite forgotten that many remedies have only a suggestive value.

Now, when it is asserted that there is suggestion without hypnosis, and that suggestion in medicine is no novelty, let it be remembered what Ewald said a short time ago—*that suggestion oversteps the bounds of medical treatment and trenches on the field of psychology.* We also see that some of the opponents of suggestion generally fail to recognize mental treatment as a factor in medicine. According to them suggestion is no affair of the physician as such. I maintain, on the contrary, that *a physician can only do good, only attain his aims, when he is a psychologist,* and that this is at least of as much importance as what we call medical art and science.

There are, then, as the school of Nancy has shown, many suggestions without hypnosis; but, in spite of this, artificially induced hypnosis makes suggestion possible in many cases where it would otherwise fail. Therefore when any one, in objecting to hypnotic suggestive therapeutics, says that there is also suggestion without hypnosis, he is merely confirming what the school of Nancy has always maintained. This "refutation" of hypnotic therapeutics is as if one were to say that a doctor is no longer needed in confinements, because many births take place spontaneously and very well without one.

Hardly anybody thinks the temporary loss of will is an objection to hypnotic therapeutics. The main point is to choose only an experienced and trustworthy experimenter, as we should do in taking chloroform.

About the indications for suggestive treatment there is not much to be said with certainty. This is why Ewald will not concede the same rank to suggestive treatment as to other methods, *e.g.*, electro-therapeutics, treatment by drugs, &c. Mendel decidedly opposes Ewald and thinks the indications clear; unluckily he does not say what they are. I think that the indications are not yet clear, but that it cannot be expected they should be, when the method of treatment has been under examination for a time relatively so short. But Ewald is certainly mistaken in thinking that fixed indications are to be found in internal disease at all. Medicine consists to a great extent in trials of various treatments. Strictly speaking, there are indications in but few cases, as may be clearly seen by comparing various text-books, and from the numerous contradictions among different doctors. I think that indications for suggestive treatment are at least as exact as those for treatment by electricity, by massage, by drugs, by baths, which are all supposed to cure a great number of definite diseases, if the too favourable explanations of the text-books and essays in journals are to be believed. In any case I think that this belief is to be found hardly anywhere but in medical students, who generally greatly over-estimate the power of therapeutics (Unverricht). Any one who keeps his eyes open in practice may soon convince himself that there unluckily are not many so-called accurate indications for the treatment of internal diseases, and particularly for nervous disorders. It is by no means a contradiction to this that there are doctors who in certain cases can find the proper remedy at a glance. It rather confirms what I have said, and is a consequence of the fact that therapeutics are less a science

than an art, although many representatives of "exact medicine" suppose the contrary. Though this has often been said before, it is, unfortunately, not sufficiently considered nowadays. On the whole, to exclude any misunderstanding, I should expressly declare that I recognize definite indications in certain cases of internal disease, but they are very rare when compared to the total number of diseases.

So far as we have hitherto been able to judge, functional neurosis is the chief field of suggestive therapeutics, *i.e.*, nervous disorders not founded on anatomical derangements. These must not be too readily confused with hysteria or with neurasthenia. It is true that these ideas are so blended, and hysteria in particular is conceived in so many different ways, that we might almost say, "What we cannot define, that we call hysteria." "Hysteria" is used in many senses; the term is used in one sense or another at pleasure, and thus sophisms are constructed which even many doctors fail to penetrate. I will here give two meanings of the word "hysterical."

In the first place, hysteria is a name for an illness which has no anatomical foundation, which has numerous and variable symptoms—now headache, now ovarian pain, now pain in the side, and now weakness in the legs. The patient is called "hysterical" as well as the symptoms. As such patients are sometimes obstinate and capricious, and like to make themselves interesting, this word "hysterical" has a somewhat unpleasant after-taste; some authors go so far as to say that a tendency to falsehood and hypocrisy is a chief symptom of such hysteria. This is evidently an unfair generalization. At all events, the multiplicity and variability of the symptoms are the main characteristics of "hysteria" taken in this

sense. Hysteria in the other sense is quite different. In many quarters any symptom is called hysterical when there is no anatomical cause for it and it is merely "nervous," *e.g.*, headache, pains in the muscles, certain tremors, frequent vomiting, &c.; even when the symptom is solitary and constant. Now, if in such a case the patient, as well as the symptoms, is to be called "hysterical," we have two entirely different meanings for the term "hysterical patient," from the interchange of which, at pleasure, all sorts of subtle sophisms result. The meanings of the term are changed to suit the discussion. For example, an author says in one place that any hysterical symptoms can be removed by hypnosis, *i.e.*, such as are marked by quick spontaneous changes. That is hysteria No. 1. But as soon as some one asserts he has seen a person, without any other symptom of hysteria, freed by suggestion from a severe pain in a muscle—the biceps, for example—then, to suit the discussion, the second meaning of the word hysterical is adopted, and it is said that the symptom was hysterical. But a prudent silence is maintained with regard to the fact that the patient suffered from one merely local pain, had no other hysterical symptom, and consequently was not hysterical in the first meaning of the term. Anything can be proved or refuted if the word "hysteria" is thus treated.

To give another proof of this I return to a letter of Charcot, which has lately aroused much attention, and in which he asserts that only hysteria can be treated by hypnosis. If this means that hysteria in sense No. 2 can also be thus treated, there is nothing to say against it, and the most different authors would agree upon the point. But, in fact, Charcot, as Nonne remarks, understands much more by "hysteria" than is understood in Germany. Thus Charcot says, in contra-

diction to two German authors, Oppenheim and Thomsen, who think the variability of the symptoms the chief mark of hysteria, that in his view this is not a characteristic of hysteria.

To avoid error it should be mentioned that Charcot has not hitherto advocated suggestive therapeutics—at least, publicly—though he admits them conditionally in his letter. He even says that a good effect may be hoped from them in hysterical phenomena. It is true that these parts of Charcot's letter about suggestive treatment are sometimes omitted when the letter is repeated, while every impartial observer must see in this passage rather a defence of suggestive therapeutics than an attack upon them, if "hysteria" is understood in the second sense given above. Moreover, while Charcot expresses himself decidedly in favour of the hypnotic treatment of hysteria, Ziemssen, who is supposed to have the same standpoint, maintains that such treatment makes it worse.

Even though Charcot's authority is appealed to, if erroneously, against suggestion, it should not be forgotten that a short time ago Charcot was attacked and laughed at; that his hypnotic experiments were mocked at; that Rieger, among others, energetically opposed hypnotization in the Salpêtrière; that Mendel said his subjects were "prepared"; that according to Ewald the said subjects obtained all sorts of advantages from submitting to the experiments (though he did not talk of fraud); and that Ewald expressed himself in a manner not altogether appreciative about Charcot's experiments with the magnet; that he described the antecedents of his subjects unflatteringly, &c. From all which it appears that the side which now claims him as an ally against hypnosis was attacking him vehemently hardly a year ago.

From this digression, which was intended to make clear what is meant by "hysteria," I return to the question of the indications for suggestive therapeutics. I will give them here, so far as my own experience permits, with the help of trustworthy authors, especially of Forel. Particularly suitable ones are all kinds of pains which have no anatomical cause (headaches, stomach-aches, ovarian pain, rheumatic and neuralgic pains); sleeplessness;

hysterical disturbances, particularly paralyses of the extremities and aphonia; disturbances of menstruation; spontaneous somnambulism; uneasy dreams; loss of appetite; alcoholism and morphinism; neurasthenic ailments; stammering (Corval, Ringier, Wetterstrand, Pauly); nervous disorders of sight (Forel, Möllerup, Chiltoff); *enuresis nocturna; pruritus cutaneus nervosus;* perverted sexual feeling, when not inherited (Krafft-Ebing, Schrenck-Notzing, Ladame); singing in the ears; prolonged cases of chorea; railway spine and emotional neuroses (Hirt); agoraphobia (De Jong); writer's cramp (of central origin).

Hysteria (in the sense of definition No. 1) is not easily curable. Consequently we try as much as possible to obtain an improvement in the symptoms. As far as our experience goes, this is at least as easily done by hypnotism and suggestion as by any other method. Much depends upon the depth of the hypnosis, and upon the degree of susceptibility to suggestion, &c. But I am decidedly of opinion that hysterical patients are less susceptible to suggestion than others. Forel thinks that a sound brain is above all things necessary for hypnosis; the sounder it is, the sooner we may hope for results. In hysterical patients the brain is often by no means sound. For the same reason it is difficult to treat insane persons by hypnotism. However, improvements have been obtained in the lighter forms of mental disease, *e.g.*, of melancholia and mania (Forel, Burckhardt, A. Voisin, Séglas, Dufour). But generally the effect is less than in the neuroses. This is partly because insane persons are not good subjects for hypnosis. Even when the hypnosis is deep, insane ideas and delusions of the senses are much more

difficult to remove than nervous troubles, such as sleeplessness and headache, which are often found to accompany psychoses (Forel). Although there may sometimes be organic changes which cause the mental disturbance, and which explain the resistance to suggestion, yet the chief reason is to be found in the tenacity of the patient's diseased ideas. These might often be rightly called auto-suggestions. A. Voisin and Repoud say, however, that they have seen good effects produced in cases of severe mental disorder; but Forel is unable to confirm this.

The therapeutic successes which hypnotism has had in neuroses have been confirmed in so many quarters that a doubt of the trustworthiness of their source is hardly possible. I will only name Forel, Krafft-Ebing, Obersteiner, Hirt, Bernheim. Those who dispute the successes do so generally *à priori*, without having scientifically and patiently tested the matter. It is a mistaken assertion that only such cases of illness can be benefited which could easily be benefited in other ways. At least I must contend that this was not so in a number of cases in my own experience, where the cold-water cure, massage, electricity, surgical operations, or drugs had been tried in vain, while suggestion, and hypnotic suggestion in particular, was successful.

Besides, even when one of the above methods is successful, we should be careful how we draw the conclusion that suggestion had nothing to do with it; for numerous remedies appear to be effectual only through suggestion; they succeed because the patient believes in them, as even Mendel, one of the most decided opponents of suggestion, has admitted. It is in the nature of things that drugs, even when they only act by suggestion, should sometimes suc-

ceed better than verbal suggestion, because many people are more easily influenced by something tangible than by words only. Some very practical investigators (Krafft-Ebing and others) even attribute a merely suggestive value to drugs in certain diseases, *e.g.*, in neurasthenia and hysteria.

With regard to organic diseases, in which we find anatomical changes in the organs, as opposed to functional derangements, we have before us a number of accredited observations, from which it follows that important functional improvements were made possible, *i.e.*, the consequences of the disease could be partly removed by hypnosis. Thus in a case of *tabes dorsalis*, though the disease continued, the severe pains were subdued (Lloyd Tuckey). It may, no doubt, be objected that the diagnosis was mistaken, and that a functional derangement was mistaken for an anatomical lesion. But the examination of sections of the spinal cord contradicted this in one such case. Bernheim saw an apoplectic paralysis rapidly improved by suggestion. The patient died later of disease of the lungs, and the seat of the original disease was discovered on dissection. Besides this confirmation by anatomy there is another method by which we can sometimes decide a doubtful diagnosis. For example, in chronic rheumatism of the joints, with clearly visible and tangible swellings, there can be no doubt about the diagnosis. If suggestion removes the pain, we have obtained an important improvement in an organic complaint. But many such cases have been published. I can confirm it from my own experience in a case of articular rheumatism.

Among other diseases accompanied by organic injury I have seen a very painful eczema of the ear, in a child of eight, made painless by post-hypnotic

suggestion. I observed this case in the company of my friend and colleague Friedemann, of Cöpenick, whom I have to thank for a number of interesting experiences in hypnotism. The child in question could not bear the slightest touch. An order given in his first hypnosis had such an effect that he could afterwards endure even strong pressure on the spot.

What are the counter-indications against hypnotic treatment, *i.e.*, what conditions forbid the use of hypnotism? I do not know of one. But it may be that when certain phenomena produced by auto-suggestion cannot be avoided the use of hypnotism is counter-indicated. However, the therapeutic effect we wish to obtain is of so much more importance than a chance attack of hysteria, &c., that in general we should not allow ourselves to be restrained by it. In any case there are no more counter-indications against this treatment than against any other.

How can the effects of hypnotism be explained? Some think that it is in itself healing and beneficial (Beaunis). The general view is that suggestion is the healing agent. I believe it to be the essential point. To make this somewhat clearer I will take an example. Suppose we wish to cure a headache by arousing in the subject the idea that the headache is gone. Spontaneous reflection would prevent this in most waking people, but in hypnosis ideas are more easily established. If the subject accepts the suggestion we may be sure that in the hypnotic state he does not feel the pain. But now we have to prevent the return of the pain after waking. Either external post-hypnotic suggestion or auto-suggestion will do this. We can make the patient continue to think the pain is gone after he wakes. He need not be con-

scious of this idea in the sense of remembering it. On the contrary, the less conscious the idea is, the more effect it will have, because reflexion will not struggle against it (Forel). Auto-suggestion is the second plan. The patient, finding himself without pain in hypnosis, may convince himself that pain is not a necessary consequence of his state, and this idea may under some circumstances be strong enough to prevent the return of the pain.

The more easily an idea can be established in the subject, the quicker a therapeutic result can be induced. And the deeper the hypnosis, the more easily ideas can be established. Consequently, the deeper the hypnosis, the better the cure. I cannot agree with Schrenck-Notzing when he says the deep stage is in general unnecessary; on the contrary, the deeper it is the better. It does not follow, of course, that the light stages are of no value. Apart from the fact that they often become deeper, they are often useful in therapeutics, especially when we have to do with motor disturbances. Much depends upon the subject's character. For example, A. may be as susceptible to suggestion in the light stage as B. is in the deep one. However, it is not to be contested that suggestibility increases in some persons with the depth of the hypnosis.

This methodical suggestion is the key to suggestive therapeutics. When the hypnotized subject refuses the suggestion, which sometimes happens, the mysterious impression may be ever so great, and yet no therapeutic result will be obtained. I have successfully treated people who certainly had no mystical ideas about the matter. People can be influenced hypnotically or suggestively though they do not believe they are hypnotized; they are often much

astonished when they wake to find they have been hypnotized. But I do not contest that in certain cases the mystical impression may not have some effect, though it is by no means the rule.

Neither is the effect to be attributed to the patient's confidence in itself, though it plays a large part. Misrepresentation has aroused so much distrust of hypnotic treatment that in some cases there is no confidence at all. But the immense power of hypnotic suggestion is shown by the fact that it succeeds in a large number of cases in spite of mistrust; for mistrust is a powerful auto-suggestion, and auto-suggestion is the greatest foe of external suggestion. The success of hypnotic suggestion will be greater the more distrust disappears, and when it has been recognized that hypnotism properly used is as harmless as electricity properly used. Then only will the power of hypnotic therapeutics be practically estimated. I have little doubt what that estimation will be. Hypnotism and suggestion will outlive many remedies whose praises fill the columns of medical journals at present.

To avoid misunderstanding, I will briefly state in what way the improvement of organic diseases by hypnotic suggestion is to be explained (according to Bernheim). I only mention this because Binswanger and Seeligmüller mistakenly represent Bernheim as having maintained that the original organic injury is done away with by suggestion (Corval). Apoplexy is an example. If a part of the brain, *a*, is injured, then the functions of the nerves served by *a* are interfered with. Now it is a well-known experience that when *a* is injured the functions of another part of the brain, *b*, are often influenced. Then the functions of the nerves served by *b* are also interfered

with; *b* itself is not organically injured, only its functions are inhibited. Now suggestion can restore these functions. It can sometimes also produce a functional amelioration in an organic disease. In any case it need not be supposed that suggestion has an immediate influence on the organic lesion, in order to explain the functional improvement in organic diseases. Bernheim's explanation may, *mutatis mutandis*, be called in for other cases. Sperling believes that electricity only does good in apoplexy by restoring the inhibited functions of parts which are anatomically sound. He is known to have experience and ability in the field of hypnotism and electrotherapeutics, such as are possessed by few, but does not believe that the part of the brain injured in apoplexy has ever been restored by electricity.

It would take too long to give all the rules for hypnotic treatment, and Baierlacher, Bernheim, and Forel have already done so. I will merely mention that there is a difference between preparatory and therapeutic experiments. Practice will enable us to decide whether the hypnosis in particular cases is deep enough to be used therapeutically, or whether further trials are needed to increase susceptibility to suggestion. In most cases preparatory experiments are necessary. The first trials should only be continued for a few minutes. If they are unsuccessful the stronger methods should be tried, *e.g.*, fixed attention. As violent pain often prevents hypnosis it is better to choose a time when the subject is free from it for the first attempt. Hypnosis will be easily induced later, even in the midst of violent pain. It is generally necessary to repeat the suggestion occasionally, after improvement or cure has been obtained, to prevent relapse.

Hypnotism does not necessarily succeed at once. If the hypnosis is deep a result may be very quickly obtained; in other cases patience and method are wanted, and the time the illness has lasted must be taken into consideration. The more the idea of pain has taken root, the more difficult is it to overcome.

Why hypnotism should be measured by a different standard than other methods of treatment is inexplicable to me. A doctor is often satisfied to obtain a result after weeks or months of electro-therapeutic treatment, and how often, after months of perseverance, it fails to appear. Why, then, should we expect suggestive therapeutics to succeed in one day? Patience on the side of both doctor and patient is often required.

I likewise deny that hypnotism should be regarded as a sort of last hope in the treatment of diseases. The longer they have lasted the more difficult they are to cure, because the idea of the disease has established itself firmly. It is the duty of every one who believes that hypnotism is harmless when properly applied to use it where he thinks it will be of service, and before it is too late. For some diseases become incurable simply because they were not rightly treated at first. The illness develops into an auto-suggestion, more and more difficult to overcome. The more a patient thinks of his pain at first, the less his attention is turned from it, the less possible it is to remove it later. We might hesitate to make long preparatory experiments with people difficult to hypnotize (Grasset). But it is to be wished that hypnosis should be used when the hypnosis can easily be induced, and when the method is indicated, rather than that a hundred other methods, all disagreeable to the patient, should first be tried in vain.

It has been asked whether hypnotism and suggestion are of real value to the art of healing. To answer this we must consider whether a larger number of patients are cured or improved by this means than by exclusively physical and chemical treatment. It is difficult to decide. If we suppose that 50 per cent. are cured or improved by the usual treatment—which is by no means the case—and that 2 per cent. are cured or improved by suggestion, these figures would not mean much, as the percentage would only be raised from 50 to 52. But if we suppose that by the ordinary methods only 1 per cent. of functional neuroses are cured or improved—which is nearer the truth—and that 2 per cent. are cured or improved by suggestion, this would be a great progress, since the percentage would be raised from 1 to 3 per cent., *i.e.*, the number of successfully-treated patients would be tripled. I have chosen two extreme cases, to show how difficult it is to settle the question. I think that very few neuroses—I will consider only these in the first place—are cured or improved by any treatment not mental; perhaps one per cent. is too high a figure.

Such questions are hard to decide, since we are not dealing with fixed quantities. I have spoken on purpose of improvement as well as cure, because cure is understood in different ways. Mendel calls a disappearance of the symptoms a cure, without regard to the time during which they have disappeared. He said that a person who was periodically deaf-mute had been cured by hypnotic treatment, because he spoke and heard for several days, though a few days later there was a relapse. I should make the idea of cure depend upon the disappearance of the tendency to return of the disease. But this is a scientific theoretical notion, while the other springs from practical need.

But I certainly believe, with Krafft-Ebing, F.

Müller, and others, that no important effect can be obtained in most functional neuroses without suggestion. Therefore I consider suggestion an immense step in advance in this direction ; suggestion without, as well as with, artificially induced hypnosis, which, however often materially helps its effect. I think that hardly any of the newest discoveries are so important to the art of healing, apart from surgery, as the study of suggestion. This will be specially pointed out in a later work. In any case, the conclusion that neither hypnotism nor suggestion will again disappear from the foreground in medicine is justified. This hope is grounded on the fact that there are in Germany a number of practical doctors, not carried away by enthusiasm, who study suggestion, and do not look for hasty successes and "miraculous" cures. They are all the more careful inasmuch as many opponents of suggestion watch their cases in the hope of forming an opinion of their failure. This is the only proper and scientific way, which the most decided opponents have not always followed.

Naturally, care must be taken to examine character as in all therapeutics. Men are no more alike mentally than physically, and I believe that their mental differences are greater than their bodily ones. Therefore it is not astonishing that doctors who have psychological knowledge should succeed, while others, who treat by hard and fast rule, fail. The investigations of many authors show what results may be obtained by a clever use of suggestion ; they have succeeded in most unpromising cases. Forel is one of these. It is true that few have it in their power to experiment as he has done. It is very unscientific to impugn the successes of others because one has failed oneself. Perhaps it may be mentioned that an

eminent Swedish alienist—Oedmann—says that he recognizes the good effects of suggestion in alcoholism, but that as he is unable to produce them he sends such patients to Wetterstrand (Corval).

No doubt experience is the best teacher. It is incomprehensible why some people deny the therapeutic value of hypnotism simply because their own few experiments have failed. It is the same with all instruments; a practised operator succeeds where an unpractised one fails. So an experienced and conscientious hypnotist will remove ailments by suggestion, while an unpractised one may induce them from want of experience. It is certain that people who are suggestible and easy to hypnotize may be influenced by any one. But in more difficult cases a doctor, who has experience and psychological knowledge, will succeed where others fail.

There is, of course, no need to cease using other means, while hypnotism is being used (Sperling); on the contrary, in each case the indications must be followed. No method of healing will be driven out by hypnotism; that is, if it is accepted in practice. Suggestion will not supplant other methods of healing, but complete them (Bourdon).

Naturally, whatever might injure the prognosis, or make suggestion ineffectual, must be avoided in suggestive therapeutics; and, before all, the fear of hypnosis. There is no doubt that this may do more injury and produce more unfavourable effects than hypnosis itself. Therefore it is advisable not to use it when the patient is excited and frightened about it; Tokarski is of the same opinion. But other mental excitements should be avoided as much as possible. Krafft-Ebing's case plainly proves that excitement may make suggestion ineffectual.

Further, I believe that the study of hypnotism will much enlarge our point of view in other ways. We shall now be able to solve many a riddle that has puzzled us. Now that it has been proved that even organic changes can be caused by suggestion we are obliged to ascribe a much greater importance to mental influences than we have hitherto done. I think that the diseases which are generally called imaginary are much more common than is supposed. I think that improper surroundings cause or increase many maladies. There are few people who are not impressed when they are assured on all sides that they look very ill, and I think many have been as much injured by this cumulative mental process as if they had been poisoned. Just as suggestion can take away pain, so it can create and strengthen it. It is small comfort to call such pains imaginary. And even if the pain is "only" imaginary it troubles the patient as much as if it were real.

Besides, I believe this expression "imaginary pain," which is used by physicians as well as laymen, is scientifically false. One author has excellently compared "imaginary pains" with hallucinations. Now we can say that the hallucinatory object is imaginary, but it is false to say the perception is imaginary; it has a central cause. It remains the same whether the object is imaginary or not; so does the pain when it is felt, *i.e.*, when there is a central process. It is a matter of indifference whether this central process is caused by a peripheral stimulus or by suggestion by a spontaneous mental act. The pain exists in both cases, and is not imaginary. If in the latter case the patient were to refer it to an external stimulus he would be wrong, but the pain as a subjective feeling is not imaginary. We may call such a pain,

without objective symptoms, what we please, but we may be sure that it is a necessary consequence of some central processes. Certain subjective ideas cause pain as much as a penetrating thorn causes pain. The removal of these is as much the doctor's affair as taking a thorn out of the foot.

Krafft-Ebing's case shows what mental influence without hypnosis can effect. The patient, fully awake, thought she had been poisoned by belladonna. A dangerous collapse followed, which was finally cured by hypnotic suggestion.

Suggestion is not only a key to the origin and aggravation of maladies, it also explains the working of drugs. If medicines have different effects when prescribed by different doctors, we shall not find the cause of this in chemical differences. We should rather ask if the manner of the prescription, the impression made by the doctor, and other mental factors have not some effect; it has been proved in many cases. We shall have to consider this influence of unconscious suggestion as of much more weight than we have done. The powerful mental influence of surgical operations has been pointed out, especially by L. Landau, and that of electricity by Möbius. Some ascribe the efficacy of homœopathy to suggestion, against which Roth emphatically protests; and I believe that many of the successes and failures of allopathy may also be laid to the account of suggestion. When the practical importance of mental influences become more generally recognized physicians will be obliged to acknowledge that psychology is as important as physiology. Psychology and psychical therapeutics will be the basis of a rational treatment of neuroses. The other methods must group themselves around this; it will be the centre, and no longer

a sort of Cinderella of science, which now admits only the influence of the body on the mind, and not that of the mind on the body.

The use of hypnotism in surgery has already been mentioned. Its use in inducing analgesia is not new; one inventive genius even imagines that God took the rib from Adam while he was in a hypnotic sleep, since he would certainly have waked had it been a natural one. The first methodical surgical operations in the magnetic sleep were begun in 1821, by Récamier. Such operations were often performed in the Paris hospitals under the direction of Baron du Potet. Mesmerism has since occasionally been used for the same purpose. Cloquet used it in 1829. He related his experiences to the French Academy of Medicine, but Lisfranc, the celebrated surgeon, put him down for an impostor or a dupe. Oudet was no better received in 1837, when he told the Academy of the extraction of teeth in the magnetic sleep.

In 1846 Esdaile performed a number of operations during mesmerically induced analgesia in the hospital at Calcutta. The wounds are said to have healed very quickly. Hellwald also draws attention to the quick healing of the wounds of the Arab pilgrims which are made in the hypnotic state. Elliotson at the same time was using mesmerism in London. Braid, who was much struck by Esdaile's results, also used hypnotism in surgery. The opinion that mesmeric passes perhaps induce analgesia better than the other hypnotic methods has some adherents now. Azam brought Braid's method of inducing analgesia to Paris (p. 13); from thence it passed to Germany, but found little support. Preyer says that military doctors and others appear often to have used empi-

rical hypnotizing methods for small operations, such as tooth-drawing. Forel, Voigt, Tillaux, Le Fort, and others have lately performed surgical operations in hypnotic analgesia.

The value of hypnotism for inducing analgesia is not very great. Analgesia cannot sometimes be induced at all, and sometimes only after repeated trials. The excitement before the operation increases the difficulty. At all events, the cases in which hypnotism can be used to make an operation painless are very rare; the care with which every such case is registered by the daily press shows this. Besides which we have at present so many certain means of inducing analgesia—ether and chloroform, which, however, occasionally kill the subject—that hypnotism is little likely to be much used. When by chance a person who is to undergo operation is found to be susceptible, there is no reason why hypnotism should not be used. Hack Tuke and Forel think that hypnotism should be used in all cases where chloroform would be dangerous. Forel believes, besides, that analgesia is more easily induced than I suppose; it is possible that a clever hypnotist may obtain better results in this direction than I have been able to do.

I once hypnotized a patient in order to open a boil painlessly. I did not succeed in inducing analgesia, but the patient was almost unable to move, so that I could perform the little operation without difficulty.

Cases in which analgesia is induced by post-hypnotic suggestion, and the operation performed in the waking state, have a greater theoretical interest (Boursier).

The value of hypnotism in obstetrics is about the

same as in surgery. Lafontaine and Fillassier among the mesmerists have put women to sleep during labour. Liébeault has done the same with hypnotism. A series of such cases has lately been published (Pritzl, Mesnet, Secheyron, Auvard, Thomas, Varnier, Voigt, De Jong). The effects were not unfavourable. The pains were regular and strong, and could often be made almost insensible by suggestion.

There is an interesting statement of Freyer's that Jörg, an eminent obstetrician, at the beginning of the century thought birth impossible in the magnetic sleep without a quick awakening; a view which is now disproved.

Much has been said of the use of hypnotism in education. This, however, belongs rather to pathology, though such distinctions are rather arbitrary. For example, a child gets chorea through imitating other children who have it. In such a case it is not easy to say where the bad habit leaves off and disease begins. The cases of Bérillon, who has cured various little tricks and bad habits in children by hypnotic suggestion, may be reckoned among diseases. It is indifferent whether we say that hypnotism is used in such cases to cure disease or in the interests of education; the point is, to know what is meant. But serious observers have by no means wished that hypnotism should be introduced into schools, but that suggestive treatment should be used by doctors to suppress the bad instincts of children. Only one author—Decroix—in spite of all sorts of contradiction, says that such suggestion should also be made by laymen; the unanimous opposition of Forel, Dekhtereff, and others shows plainly that my view is just. When an

anonymous German author[1] thought he made the thing ridiculous, or refuted French authors by banishing hypnotism from the schools, he simply refuted an assertion that was never made. Other authors have taken superfluous pains to do the same. The French authors (Bérillon, Hément, Netter, Leclerc, A. Voisin, Collineau) merely mean that certain faults in children, which in my view and that of others are pathological, should be cured by medical hypnotic suggestion, particularly when other methods have failed.

The frequent objection (Blum, Seeligmüller) that children would thus become machines instead of independent creatures is erroneous. Hypnotic suggestion and suggestion out of hypnosis have the same aim: to determine the subject's will in a certain direction. He is to do right, not unconsciously and mechanically, but with conscious will, which has got its direction either from hypnotic suggestion or ordinary education. Suggestion sets the conscious will in the right direction as education does.

Education is only good when what is taught grows into an auto-suggestion; *i.e.*, when in particular cases the well-taught person must consciously do the right he has been taught to will. But hypnotic suggestion is also only good when it turns into auto-suggestion (Forel); that is, when the same thing happens as without hypnosis. We see again that the false views result from the fact that hypnotic suggestion is taken for an unconscious process—a supposition which I have already refuted (p. 264).

Cases of chronic alcoholism, which have been successfully treated by hypnotic suggestion by several experimenters (Forel, A. Voisin, Ladame, Widmer, Wetterstrand, Corval), belong here.

[1] In the paper "Hypnotismus in der Pädagogik," published by Heuser.

A decision can no doubt be arrived at only by serious examination, such as the men just mentioned have made.

I shall only briefly mention other scientific uses of hypnotism. It will no doubt be of great use to psychology, although psychologists in Germany seem disinclined to approach the subject. In other countries much psychological work, founded on hypnotism, has been done. Beaunis goes so far as to say that hypnotism is to psychologists what vivisection is to physiologists. Forel and Krafft-Ebing think the same. Max Dessoir, in particular, has often represented the great value of hypnotism to psychology.

I believe, indeed, that some of the facts are of the deepest interest ; *e.g.*, the apparent freedom of will of hypnotic subjects in post-hypnotic actions. Hypnotism is a mine for the psychological investigator, for hypnosis is nothing but a mental state. When we think that psychologists have always used dreams so much in their investigations of mental life, and that experiments can be better made in hypnosis than in ordinary sleep, because it can be regulated at pleasure, we cannot deny the value of hypnotism to psychology. Krafft-Ebing has lately pointed out how important it is in the study of consciousness.

I will not enter further into the advantages which other sciences may hope to gain from it. I confidently hope that the study of it will help to clear up the hitherto dim field of mental life, and that it will help to free us from the mountain of superstition instead of increasing it.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE LEGAL ASPECTS OF HYPNOTISM.

WE will now discuss the points which have a particular interest in law. Some of the old adherents of animal magnetism recognized the legal importance of the subject, though their point of view differed slightly from ours. Thus, the commission which investigated the matter in Deslon's time, besides their official verdict, sent in a private report to the king, which, it appears, came to light through the Revolution ; they thought that morality especially was threatened. The mesmerists in Germany—Kieser, for example—also touched upon the legal side of magnetism. Charpignon has occupied himself with the point lately. Liébeault also thoroughly discussed the question in his book in 1866, and his explanations are very valuable even now. Gilles de la Tourette, Liégeois, and particularly Forel, Reden, Lilienthal, and Bentivegni have studied the legal side of the question very recently.

The first point to be considered is the relation of hypnotism to crime. The crimes committed on, and by, hypnotic subjects must both be discussed. We will begin with the first.

The offences against morality to which hypnotic subjects are exposed, are important ; few such cases have hitherto come to the notice of the law. F. C.

Müller supposes that this may be because, from loss of memory, the subject is usually unaware of them. But Forel's supposition seems to me more probable; he thinks such offences are rare because experimenters know that the loss of memory is only temporary, and that the subject may unexpectedly remember the occurrences of earlier hypnoses. A number of such cases were brought to justice in Germany at the time when animal magnetism was flourishing. Wolfram published one in 1821. A doctor is said to have assaulted his patient during the magnetic sleep. He endeavoured to avoid the consequences by procuring abortion, and this brought him to justice; however, he was acquitted.

Lately several cases have been made known in France. A more exact collection of them may be found in Liégeois' book ("De la Suggestion," &c.). One case is that of a professional magnetizer of Marseilles, who, in 1853, assaulted a girl in the magnetic sleep. The experts, Coste and Broquier, with whom the well-known authorities on medical jurisprudence, Devergie and Tardieu, agreed, gave their opinion that a magnetized subject might be assaulted against her will and without her consciousness.

The case of Castellan in 1865, reported by Prosper Despine, is better known. An assault was committed on a subject in an obviously hypnotic state, though she retained her consciousness. Liégeois refers the case to suggestion; Castellan, the criminal, must have suggested to his victim, Joséphine H., to love him, trust him, &c. Castellan was condemned to twelve years' imprisonment, upon the opinion of Roux and Auban, with whom the doctors Hériart, Paulet, and Théus were associated.

The Lévy case, in 1879, is also interesting. A

dentist of Rouen, named Lévy, assaulted a girl in the magnetic sleep. The case is remarkable because the girl's mother was present and noticed nothing. Lévy had placed his dentist's chair so as not to be seen. Brouardel gave his opinion on the case and Lévy was imprisoned for ten years.

Bellanger mentions the case of a woman who was assaulted by a doctor, and a case in Geneva in 1882, in which Ladame gave evidence, may be mentioned; the supposed offender was acquitted, as the accusation was possibly false.

There are some other cases in Liégeois, in Goltdammer's Archives for 1863, and in F. C. Müller's book, "Die Psychopathologie des Bewusstseins." The number would be slightly increased if some cases of auto-somnambulism were counted among them.

The judgment of such cases would offer no difficulty if the state of affairs was always clear; the same legal clauses would be used as in cases of narcosis by chloroform.

Among further offences against hypnotic subjects may be mentioned intentional injury to health, which in some cases might be caused by post-hypnotic suggestion. All sorts of paralyses, loss of memory, &c., may be thus caused; even some paralyses with objective symptoms, such as the so-called paralyses dependent on idea, on p. 63. It is not probable that these will ever be important from a legal point of view, and Lafforgue's supposition that a man might try to evade military service by causing a disease to be suggested to him seems to me even more improbable. At all events, the law provides for such cases.

I need hardly add that bodily injury may be caused

by inattention to the proper precautions, nor need I discuss the question of deprivation of will in cases when the subject is hypnotized without his consent.

It has also been asked (Roux-Freissineng) whether suicide might not be caused by suggestion; to which I say, "Yes, if the suggestion were adroitly made."

The hypnotic state might be used to get possession of property illegally. People can be induced hypnotically and post-hypnotically to sign promissory notes, deeds of gift, &c. I reported to the Society of Prussian Medical Officers a case of a man who in the post-hypnotic state promised a donation to the Society, and carefully explained in writing that he did it of his own accord, after I had suggested to him that he should think so. Testamentary dispositions might be influenced in the same way.

I shall speak later of the significance of such acts in civil law, when quoting Bentivegni. I cannot venture to decide whether the criminal law would interpose in such cases.

There are important differences of opinion about the offences which hypnotic subjects may be caused to commit. Liégeois, who has discussed the legal side of the question of hypnotism in a scientific manner, thinks this danger very great, while Gilles de la Tourette, Pierre Janet, Benedikt, and others, deny it altogether.

There is no doubt that subjects may be induced to commit all sorts of imaginary crimes in one's study. I have made hardly any such suggestions, and have small experience on the point. In any case a repetition of them is superfluous. If the conditions of the experiment are not changed, it is useless to repeat it merely to confirm what we already know. And these

criminal suggestions are not altogether pleasant. I certainly do not believe that they injure the moral state of the subject, for the suggestion may be negatived and forgotten. But these laboratory experiments prove nothing, because some trace of consciousness always remains to tell the subject he is playing a comedy (Franck, Delbœuf), consequently he will offer a slighter resistance. He will more readily try to commit a murder with a piece of paper than with a real dagger, because, as we have seen, he almost always dimly realizes his real situation. These experiments, carried out by Liégeois, Foureaux, and others in their studies do not, therefore, prove the danger.

On the other hand, Liégeois has made some such experiments in all apparent earnestness, and in the presence of officers of the law, by hypnotic and post-hypnotic suggestion, and even by suggestion in the waking state. He made a girl fire a revolver, which she thought was loaded, at her mother; and another put arsenic into the drink of a relation. So that it cannot be disputed that a crime may be committed in this way, as Liégeois and Forel insist. On theoretical grounds I believe it is possible with some subjects. There may be much exaggeration. For example, few people are so susceptible as to accept the suggestion of a criminal act without repeated hypnotization. It is also true that many would refuse even after long hypnotic training (Delbœuf). Gilles de la Tourette insists, besides, that a criminal who suggested an offence would be no more protected from discovery than if he did the thing himself. A hypnotic subject is not a suitable instrument for the commission of a crime. For a person who would commit a crime by post-hypnotic suggestion

would, generally speaking, not be a person of the most honourable character, since morally defective people are decidedly easier to affect in this way than those with strong principles (Forel). However, criminal suggestion is not impossible. Forel thinks the greatest danger is that at the time the suggestion is made the subject may be induced to believe that he is acting without constraint. But this should only be possible in the case of morally defective persons. If such a case were brought to justice, the experts would need to consider the following explanations. As has been said, all suggestions, criminal and otherwise, can be made hypnotically or post-hypnotically, and the legal decision would differ accordingly.

Till now I have called those states "waking states" in which a post-hypnotic suggestion is carried out when the state was apparently normal, except on the one point. But I only did this to avoid complication; the question has been passed over, but Bentivegni has lately called attention to it. I will, therefore, now consider whether there is a mental state which may be called normal in spite of irregularity on one point, as is the case when post-hypnotic suggestions are carried out in an apparently normal waking state.

We will take a simple case. I say to X. in hypnosis, "When you wake you will give A. a blow in the ribs." X. wakes, and instinctively does what I told him. He perfectly remembers doing it, and will accept no other suggestion either before or during the act. Thus it appears that X. is quite normal, except on the one point. But the modern psychology, and medical jurisprudence in particular, say that a man cannot be mentally abnormal on one point only; they rather suppose a mental disturbance showing itself on one point, which is a symptom of general mental disturbance (Krafft-Ebing, Bentivegni, Morel, Maudsley). Therefore the state in carrying out a post-hypnotic suggestion would be abnormal, though it appeared normal, as Bentivegni insists. But this author rightly thinks that this cannot be supposed in all cases of post-hypnotic suggestion, otherwise we should be obliged to think every man

who accepted a therapeutic post-hypnotic suggestion was in an abnormal state while he carried it out. Here is a case : Y. is hypnotized in my warm room, and I tell him to say in half an hour, " Your room is frightfully hot." Now, supposing that it is really hot in my room, the carrying out of this post-hypnotic suggestion would by no means suffice to prove the abnormal state of the subject.

Thus we see that in these cases—we are only considering cases in which there is no symptom of a new abnormal state—the suggestion is sometimes carried out in a changed mental state, and sometimes in a completely normal one. How can we decide which is which? A diagnostic point is difficult to find, but it seems to me that Bentivegni's is the only practicable one at present, though it is rather vague. He says, " The state while carrying out a post-hypnotic suggestion can only be thought normal when the motive force of the suggestion is such as can also be explained by the normal disposition of the subject, and when it is not so opposed to reality that the normal individual would discover and correct it." According to the last clause, post-hypnotic sense delusions without a renewed state of suggestibility would at once prove an abnormal mental state ; according to the first, an abnormal state of consciousness must also be supposed for the carrying out of numerous post-hypnotic acts, even when there is no renewed state of suggestibility. Truly, in many cases it is difficult to decide whether a subject finds the motive force for his post-hypnotic act in his normal disposition or not. However, Bentivegni has found a point of view from which these post-hypnotic suggestions may be judged. I now apply this to the two above examples. One post-hypnotic suggestion was that X. should give A. a blow in the ribs. Let us suppose that X. is a peaceful man, who likes A. ; then the motive of X.'s act would be inexplicable from his normal disposition ; consequently, according to Bentivegni, his post-hypnotic state would be abnormal. Y.'s remark about the heat was different. It was a natural remark, supposing that the room was really warm. Consequently we have no reason to conclude a generally abnormal mental state. The question is no doubt difficult to decide, because " normal disposition " is hard to define. However, Bentivegni has brought us a good deal nearer to solution.

Desjardins in France expresses the strange opinion

that a person who commits a crime by hypnotic or post-hypnotic suggestion is punishable, because he might have foreseen the possibility of such a suggestion.

According to Lilienthal this position is quite untenable. It would be a strange sort of justice which punished a crime committed in unconsciousness and without intention. The case would be different if the subject had caused the criminal act to be suggested to him in hypnosis, perhaps with the view of carrying it out more courageously. Lilienthal thinks that in this case he would be punishable. The power of self-determination would be normal at the moment of decision. The induction of the hypnosis would be the cause of the act, and consequently the subject would be guilty (Lilienthal).

Campili, who has thoroughly discussed the different legal questions connected with hypnosis, distinguishes between the standpoints of two schools, the classical and the anthropological.[1] According to the first there is no guilt in the last-mentioned case, as there can be no reflexion when the crime is committed; according to the last the criminal must be punished because he is dangerous to society.

If hypnosis is considered to be a state of mental disease, then all actions in the hypnotic state must go unpunished. Punishment of an act committed in a state of mental disease would be at least a novelty. It is not the custom at present, even if the legal code did not prevent it.

[1] It may briefly be remarked, that in Italy these two schools are decidedly opposed; the classical school recognizes freedom of will, and the anthropological does not. However, the last-named also agrees to punishment in such a case; but only because the person concerned is dangerous to society, not because his will is free when he commits the offence.

The importance of hypnosis in civil law was not seriously considered at first. Most investigators passed it over, supposing that hypnotism could only be important in criminal law. However, Bentivegni has put forward the contrary in a detailed work. I am, unfortunately, no expert, and cannot decide the question. The main points of what follows are therefore borrowed from Bentivegni's work, which besides puts forward many new views in connection with hypnotism.

Bentivegni, in discussing hypnotism in its relation to civil law, distinguishes between responsibility in business and liability for damages. The first means such a degree of freedom of will as is necessary for the transaction of business in connection with legal affairs. Liability for damages means that degree of freedom of will which causes responsibility for unlawful acts.

As regards responsibility in business, Bentivegni thinks that a mere state of hypnotic suggestibility is enough to exclude it, since in such a case the power to act with reflection and reason is wanting. It is true he also takes the stage of hypnosis into account, for a very light stage would hardly exclude responsibility in business. It should be said that in opposition to earlier views, he thinks that not only such acts as are carried out through hypnotic suggestion are invalid, but that the mere existence of hypnotic suggestibility is enough under some circumstances to exclude business responsibility, even when the acts are not suggested. He thinks the same about most post-hypnotic suggestions, where he makes several distinctions. All transactions are invalid which are effected in a post-hypnotic state in which there is renewed suggestibility. Also, the state

during the carrying out of a post-hypnotic suggestion, if it is united with post-hypnotic forgetfulness of the act, excludes responsibility, even if the suggestibility has ceased. But we saw (p. 145) that a person may be apparently quite awake and yet carry out a post-hypnotic suggestion without remarking it, without falling into a new hypnosis, and calmly talking meanwhile. Now we must ask whether such post-hypnotic suggestions affect responsibility in business. Bentivegni decides this according to the kind of suggestion. When the post-hypnotic suggestion is merely a movement or action which the subject often does automatically at other times, there is no reason to question the responsibility. Some persons, for example, have a habit of scribbling on paper. Now, according to Bentivegni, if he does this post-hypnotically, he is not in an unfit state for business. But he is unfit when he does post-hypnotically what he would refuse to do under normal circumstances. Bentivegni thinks that when the post-hypnotic act is done in an apparently waking state, *i.e.*, when there is no loss of memory and no susceptibility to suggestion, the question becomes very difficult. He thinks (p. 340) that in such a case all depends on the nature of the suggestion. The question is, Are the suggested acts, and their possible motives, of such a nature as to be willingly received into the consciousness of the subject, and to be compatible with the general content of his consciousness, or not? Bentivegni gives the two following examples: 1. A. owes B. £20, but has forgotten it; in hypnosis he is told to pay B. the money at the first opportunity, which he does, post-hypnotically. 2. C., who is not in good circumstances, is told in hypnosis to make a present of his personal property to D., whom he does

not like. He wakes, and the idea occurs to him when he sees D.; he resists at first, but finally formally obeys the order.

According to Bentivegni, in Example I. neither responsibility for the particular act nor the capacity for business in general need be doubted, because the suggestion was acceptable to the motives pre-existing in the subject's consciousness. But in Example II. there must be a revolution in the subject's consciousness before he will obey a suggestion so contrary to his interests. Therefore Bentivegni thinks the responsibility is doubtful, at least as far as the single act is concerned.

In other cases the incapacity is much more extensive, because delusive ideas may be post-hypnotically suggested, which, without doubt, cause incapacity for business so long as they last, in the same way as do the delusions of the insane. Bentivegni thinks it should be provisionally supposed that a subject who is under the influence of a post-hypnotically suggested idea must be considered unfit for business, when this idea is of such a kind that its spontaneous recurrence would partially or wholly do away with his responsibility.

Finally, besides the post-hypnotic suggestions which do not interfere with consciousness, and those which alter consciousness, as insane ideas do, Bentivegni discusses a third category of suggestions. For example, a subject might be told in hypnosis that a particular engraving was an oil-painting. In such a case the error must be considered, *i.e.*, the inability to perceive the real facts. It is an important question whether such a suggested error is excusable; Bentivegni thinks it generally is. If the error is excusable, there could be no claim for damages.

Bentivegni next discusses liability for damages. This implies an illegal act committed in a responsible state, and the civil law punishes it with fine. According to the Prussian common law all illegal acts are irresponsible when the agent is not in possession of his reason and is unable to control his actions. Consequently the conclusions that Bentivegni draws with regard to irresponsibility in business hold good also for liability for damages.

They hold good for all acts done in a state of hypnotic suggestibility, such as in deep hypnosis and in some post-hypnotic states of suggestibility, and further for the post-hypnotic states in which there is loss of memory. If such a division of the consciousness occurs through post-hypnotic suggestion that a suggested act is done, independently of the normal activity, *e.g.*, if a subject after hypnosis, but under the influence of post-hypnotic suggestion, injures some other person, he will not be liable to damages if he is in an unfit state for business, as this state is described above. But any man who causes himself to be hypnotized, only that he may not be responsible for his misdeeds, must make reparation for every damage, as appears from a decision of the common law (Bentivegni).

Of course, I have been unable to enter into detail on all points. I have taken the chief facts concerning the legal importance of hypnosis from the learned work of Bentivegni, "Die Hypnose und ihre civilrechtliche Bedeutung," as may be seen from the numerous quotations. I recommend the book to any one who wishes to study the question.

Retroactive hallucinations are of great importance in law. They can be used to falsify testi-

mony. People can be made to believe that they have witnessed certain scenes, or even crimes, &c I have before pointed out the analogy between these retroactive suggestions and many phenomena of ordinary life. Lilienthal believes that the training of witnesses is the same sort of thing, and Forel explains the management of the different parties in a lawsuit by the counsel in the same way. Max Dessoir agrees with him. Bernheim and Motet believe that the Tisza-Eszlar lawsuit was the result of a retroactive suggestion made by Moritz Scharff without inducing hypnosis. As a matter of fact two parties often assert the exact opposite both in law cases and in ordinary life without conscious falsehood. An old proverb says, "The wish is father to the thought;" and each party imagines what it wishes. An honest delusion of memory is the consequence.

Bernheim insists upon certain rules of precaution for preventing witnesses giving false testimony purely in consequence of the method of examination. He thinks that the suggestibility of the witnesses should be tested, and that this could be done by suggesting a reply which could at once be proved incorrect. This advice, with which Forel agrees, may seem self-evident, but it is practically valuable. Every one knows how easily mistakes are made in legal cases from mental excitement. Any excited state lessens the power of cool reflection which is required for every act of memory.

Bernheim's wish certainly does not appear superfluous, when we recollect that he has succeeded in inducing complete delusions of memory by suggestion without hypnosis; he has made people believe they had witnessed thefts, &c., which were purely imaginary.

The next question is, Can hypnotism be in any way made useful to justice? It cannot be denied that the point may become of practical importance at any moment. Is hypnotization in a court of justice allowable at present? Lilienthal says it certainly is under some conditions, and for some purposes.

To the question occasionally asked, whether hypnotism may be used to obtain testimony from the accused or from witnesses which they decline to give in a waking state, we must certainly answer in the negative, in the present state of the law.

The practical value of such a proceeding has been much exaggerated. In the first place, very few people can be hypnotized against their will, and it is not to be supposed that an accused person would submit to the necessary conditions.

Besides this, I think it a mistake to suppose that a hypnotic subject would divulge all his secrets so easily. This supposition is copied from one book into another, but is none the truer for that. It is supported by a few well-known cases; for instance, that of Giraud-Teulon and Demarquay, who were obliged to wake one of their subjects who began to tell secrets; and a similar case is related by Brierre de Boismont. Though I do not contest the truth of these cases, I must insist that the phenomenon is rare. I have never observed it. According to my experience the subject keeps his individuality, and what he does not choose to tell he hides. A further question, whether the subject can be induced to tell by suggestion, must be answered in the affirmative, in a few cases. I have hardly any personal experience in this direction. I once observed a case of lock-jaw, when the subject feared some word would escape him. The spasm was so strong that it was impossible to end it artificially.

It is much easier to attain the end in a circuitous way than by suggestion; by suggesting a false premise, for example, as I have mentioned on p. 161. Let the subject be told that some person is present in whom he would confide, or that the people he does not wish to tell are absent. This answers in many cases.

But all such statements must be received with caution, for I can safely assert that hypnotic subjects can tell falsehoods as well as if they were awake, and that subtle webs of falsehood are invented in hypnosis. Lombroso tried in one case to obtain a confession of a crime which had been proved, though the subject had always denied it. The attempt was useless; the subject told the same tissue of lies as when awake. Laurent and Algeri give the same information. In any case, a statement made in hypnosis must be received with caution; it might be an indication, but not a proof.

I have, however, made some experiments in another direction. Interested by Max Dessoir's experiments in automatic writing, I tried to obtain results in the same way, with a subject whose consent I previously got. I put a pencil into his hand, and ordered him to answer certain questions, but not to write purposely. The subject wrote everything I told him, and answered every question, betraying many family secrets without knowing it or wishing it. He did not know that he was writing. I have not space to enter into details of this case.

Thus, in law, hypnotism might be used to decide whether a person were hypnotizable or not, or to obtain a statement which the accused or the witnesses cannot give in the waking state. Such a case may occur, and, as a matter of fact, the question has already been of practical importance.

Such statements in hypnosis would be valuable because subjects remember in later hypnoses all that has occurred in earlier ones. Now, if it is suspected that the subject has been the victim or the instrument of a crime which he forgets in the waking state, it is evident that hypnotism should be judicially used, for re-hypnotization might clear up the case.

But according to Lilienthal there is a legal limitation here. He thinks an accused person or subject may be hypnotized if he consents. But hypnotization is only permissible to confirm the fact of hypnotizability, and he thinks a judicial examination in hypnosis is illegal. However, the arrangement of criminal proceedings does not appear to me so carefully defined that a statement made in hypnosis might not be received in particular cases; it is certain that in some circumstances such a statement might be very important. For, as so many persons are susceptible, a mere proof of susceptibility to hypnotism would not be worth much. Lilienthal thinks that such a statement is inadmissible, because the testimony of unsworn witnesses is only allowed in certain cases, and an oath could not be administered to a hypnotized subject, and it would not be possible either to make him swear to his statement after waking. The statements of an accused person in hypnosis are not admissible, because he should not be compelled to make statements against his will. However, I think that Lilienthal here overlooks the fact that when an accused person, who has forgotten the criminal suggestion in his waking state, demands to be hypnotized that he may remember, he is not making a statement against his will. At the most it would only be a statement without his will. I cannot venture to decide what scruples a lawyer might have,

neither do I feel competent to decide whether the statement of a hypnotized witness is admissible in law.

Goltdammer relates that this question of the use of hypnotism in law called up a discussion in a court of justice between the defending counsel and the counsel for the crown, in a suit at Verona twenty-six years ago. It was a case of assault in magnetic sleep. There was loss of memory in the waking state. The defending counsel opposed the counsel for the crown, who proposed to re-magnetize the assaulted person, but the court agreed to his doing so, as it considered the induction of the magnetic sleep merely as a method of proof. The victim made important statements in the sleep, and in consequence of these the accused was condemned.

We will now discuss what should be done when the accused person pleads that he has committed the offence through hypnotic or post-hypnotic suggestion, or when he says he has been the victim of a crime in hypnosis. If such a plea had never been made, hypnotism need never be judicially considered. The point requiring consideration, as Forel points out, is that when the crime is suggested it may also be impressed upon the subject that he shall think he has acted freely. However possible this may be, a consideration of it at present would lead to the most monstrous consequences. If any regard were paid to it, we should be obliged to take into consideration that every case of crime might be a result of hypnotic suggestion. This is always theoretically possible, especially when the crime does not in any way advantage the accused (Delbœuf). But at present—whether rightly or wrongly must be left out of the

question—it is impossible for justice to weigh this point. We must confine ourselves to the consideration that this objection might be raised, greatly to the advantage of the accused (Riant).

Let us suppose that the accused says the crime was suggested to him, that he felt a subjective constraint, and that he has often been hypnotized, but that he does not remember the suggestion.

It would then have to be judicially decided—(1) whether the accused was really hypnotized; (2) whether a suggestion was made to him in this state; (3) who made the suggestion; (4) to what degree he was suggestible (Max Dessoir).

Now, if the statements of witnesses were insufficient, he could be hypnotized; but, as is easily to be seen, hypnotization would naturally prove nothing. I will therefore suppose that examination and statements made in hypnosis were legally admissible. Making use of the memory in hypnosis we should, first of all, ask who made the criminal suggestion. If no answer was obtained (since the originator might have also suggested loss of memory) an indirect method must be used, such as Liégeois mentions; the originator might be discovered by means of association, if any one is decidedly suspected. The subject might be told to laugh, cough, &c., when he saw the originator, or his photograph, or heard his name. I believe he could probably be got at in this way; but there must be a starting-point, such as suspicion of somebody.

If nobody were suspected the name of the originator might probably be got at in some other way; *e.g.*, by automatic writing.

I think it certain the aim could be attained by repeated suggestions, in spite of loss of memory; for a suggested loss of memory can be made to disappear

by repeated contrary suggestions in a new hypnosis. Finally, as I have said, the degree of suggestibility must be ascertained. This could also be done by fresh suggestions, which would have full play in a new hypnosis. But further, the author of the crime might suggest that the subject should not be hypnotizable by anybody but himself, as has been explained on p. 157; this would complicate matters. Although no experiments have yet been made on this point, my own experience makes it seem probable that even such a suggestion might be made ineffectual by repeated opposed suggestions in new hypnoses—supposing, of course, that a repetition of the original suggestion could be prevented.

The case would be the same if a subject asserted that he had been the victim of a crime; new hypnoses must be induced, and if there was loss of memory the question must be cleared up by examination during hypnosis, supposing the law allowed it.

All this shows what difficulties would arise if hypnosis should become an important question in law. New hypnotization would only result in a certain degree of probability, since (1) there is intentional falsehood in hypnosis; (2) the assertions may be influenced by previous suggestions; (3) the answers are readily influenced by the method of examination; (4) previous suggestion may make new hypnoses very hard to induce.

All which shows that statements in hypnosis might be indications, but could never be proofs. Danillo even thinks such assertions so completely untrustworthy that he proposes to refuse to accept them. As a matter of course all the other points should be weighed, as in ordinary cases; such as who benefits by the crime; whether the subject has often been

hypnotized, &c. This would be the only way when the person supposed to have been influenced by suggestion is already dead, as is conceivable in a will case. Such a case does not seem to be unlikely, and would be very difficult to clear up.

And in cases of legal hypnotization the possibility of simulation must, of course, be considered, as well as the possibility of a purposely false accusation (Ladame). In judging of simulation the bodily symptoms of the school of Charcot must on no account be alone considered, as they are relatively uncommon. Gilles de la Tourette ascribes a legal importance to the stages of Charcot and their symptoms, which they by no means deserve.

Finally, Forel's opinion may be mentioned. He thinks indirect extortion of money by an unprincipled experimenter a much greater danger in hypnotism than direct criminal actions, and that it would not be difficult for such a man to avoid direct conflict with the law.

Many proposals have been made for avoiding the possible dangers of hypnotism to health as well as to morality. Delacroix, in France, demands that hypnotization should be legal only for doctors, and then only when at least two are present. Friedberg wished in 1880 that hypnotic experiments should only be allowed in the presence of a doctor;[1] Grasset and others agree with him.

[1] According to a short notice in the *Deutsche Med. Zeit.* in a part of Russia any doctor who wishes to hypnotize is ordered to have two other doctors present. This proposal—about which I can find no further details—plainly shows a want of experience. On the ground of my own experiments I could make many objections, but content myself with the following: (1) Who is to pay the two doctors who are merely spectators?

It would certainly be well to avoid all dangers by means of a law. But to begin with, the term "hypnotism" is vague and hard to define, and this alone would raise all sorts of difficulties. And other difficulties would be raised by the fact that many people can hypnotize themselves (Preyer).

But hypnotization is by no means so dangerous as would be concluded from many novels, whose authors have naturally chosen the rarest and most sensational phenomena. There are in reality things more important than hypnotism from a hygienic standpoint. For example, it would be of great service if exact legal directions for disinfection were given to both doctors and laymen attending cases of diphtheria, and if disobedience to such directions were severely punished. This point seems to me much more weighty than the hygienic importance of hypnotism. How many people have communicated diseases by insufficient disinfection! The happiness of many families has been destroyed, and the guilty person has remained unpunished.

I think it indispensable that science should take possession of hypnotism. This is the easiest way to prevent its misuse. When I speak of science I naturally mean psychology as well as medicine, for hypnotism will never become a factor in medicine without a scientific psychological basis. Psychology is needed for the investigation of mental states just as chemistry and physics are needed for the testing of drugs and the investigation of electricity. But just

(2) Should a doctor, who is perhaps treating a poor man without any fee, pay the two other doctors into the bargain? (3) If there is only one doctor in a place is he to fetch doctors from one or two other places to witness an experiment which perhaps must be repeated daily?

as medicine is obliged in part to leave the study of chemical and physical agents to the representatives of other sciences, so it will be obliged not only to leave the investigation of hypnotism to psychologists, but to beg them to undertake it. But as it is necessary to have some physical and chemical knowledge in order to prescribe drugs, so it is necessary for a doctor to have some psychological knowledge before he can use hypnotism. In a time when the pillars of therapeutics, though apparently raised on a foundation of exact medicine, are crumbling more and more; when the supposed fixed indications—which many think are a prerogative of non-mental therapeutics—are more and more attacked; when men like Unverricht, Arndt, and Hugo Schulz discover the errors and false conclusions of a system of therapeutics supposed to be guided by fixed indications; when the "exact" therapeutics of fever have been more and more abandoned during the last ten years, and knowledge of fever seems to be returning to the standpoint of Hippocrates, we have no right to be hostile to psychology. Nowadays, when ill-grounded therapeutics are increasingly attacked by doctors as well as laymen, an assertion such as was lately made is untenable: "Mental treatment is outside the domain of medicine, because there are no fixed indications for mental treatment." But mental therapeutics are an integral part of medical treatment, and as the study of hypnotism is a department of psychology, it should not be superciliously rejected; hypnotism should be regarded as a department of science in medical circles as well as in any others.

From this point of view medicine and psychology should unite to study the question. In any case the path is made plain already. Public exhibitions have

called the attention of science to these states, though on the other hand the flavour of charlatanism in the matter has repelled many. For this reason it is a good thing that such public exhibitions have been forbidden in Prussia. Nothing now prevents our approaching the subject in a scientific manner.

I do not wish to depreciate the services of those who have drawn attention to hypnotism by public exhibitions. Just as I refuse to join in the general condemnation of Mesmer, I try to judge men such as Hansen, Böllert, and others, fairly. Though their motives may not have been purely unselfish, they have been of great service to science, since without them we should probably still be ignorant of the subject. To the honour of those mentioned, to whom Donato may be added, it should be expressly stated that all three of them have been ready to help the representatives of science in the most straightforward way. Heidenhain, Michael, Wernicke, Morselli, and many others have emphatically recognized this. None the less, I oppose such exhibitions for the reasons mentioned, and I do not think they are justified by Delbœuf's supposition that they are the best means of spreading a knowledge of hypnotism, and thus lessening its dangers.

CHAPTER IX.

ANIMAL MAGNETISM, ETC.

THE following chapter aims at giving the reader an idea of some phenomena which are often mentioned in connection with hypnotism, although the connection is rather historical than essential. In my view they are the consequence of erroneously interpreted observations. But as they are often quoted, and it is necessary to know at least something about them, I will explain them in the following sections. I do not think that the conclusions drawn from them are just, but everything should be examined without prejudice. A scientific refutation helps truth more than *à priori* negation; and some of these things are related by eminent observers. An investigation is as much in place here as it was when Virchow consented to examine the case of Louise Lateau when the necessary conditions were fulfilled. As Virchow remarks what we call the laws of nature must vary according to our frequent new experiences.

The phenomena are—(1) animal magnetism; (2) super-normal thought-transference, telepathy (*suggestion mentale*); (3) certain super-normal acts in somnambulism; (4) the effect of the magnet on hypnotic subjects; (5) the effect of drugs on approach or contact.

In animal magnetism the chief part is played by a personal influence, not resulting from suggestion, which A. exercises over B. The following examples will make this clear:—

A. tells B., "You cannot speak." B. hears, and cannot speak; this is merely suggestion. If A. makes mesmeric passes down B.'s arm, and analgesia follows, this may be also suggestion. B. knows what A. is doing, and the result may be produced by B.'s imagination in a purely mental way. Let us suppose that C. comes on the scene, and makes passes over B.'s arm, and that analgesia does not follow; suggestion explains this too. B. believes that A. can induce analgesia, and that C. cannot, and the results are in accord with his belief. But the case is different when B. does not know whether A. or C. is making the passes. According to the views of the adherents of animal magnetism—the so-called mesmerists—A. can produce analgesia by magnetizing and C. cannot. They therefore think that A. has some personal influence which suggestion does not explain. This influence is an inherent power in some people, and only such people can magnetize. This example shows what is at present understood by mesmerism or animal magnetism (vital magnetism, bio-magnetism, zoo-magnetism).

The mesmerists think that a man who has this power can cause local or general analgesia or contractures, or even cure diseases. He can even magnetize children under a year old, and influence them therapeutically. Liébeault, the founder of the Nancy school and of the method of suggestion, who disputed the magnetic influence in 1866, became a firm adherent of it later. In 1883 he published a book in which he describes cures of children under three

years; these cures caused the change in his views. He thought that though nearly all might be explained by suggestion, something remained which needed another explanation, and this he called animal magnetism or zoo-magnetism—a name used by Bartels in the beginning of this century. Lately Liébeault appears to have abandoned his belief in animal magnetism again.

Besides the effects named—induction of analgesia and contractures, the healing of diseases, and its influence on young children—other effects of this supposed animal magnetism are mentioned as proving the existence of the force. Du Prel, one of its decided adherents, gives the following: Firstly, animals can be magnetized, in which case he thinks suggestion out of the question. On this point I refer the reader to the hypnotic experiments on animals which I have described. Such a force cannot be concluded from them. In the first place, it is by no means proved that animals are not susceptible to suggestion; *e.g.*, if an animal is held for some time, why should it not be able to conclude that it is unable to move, even after it has been released? Many eminent experimenters hold this view. And further, certain stimuli applied to the nerves of the skin make movements impossible, though the stimuli are not caused by some unknown force; and the fascination which the rattlesnake exercises on birds cannot be considered a proof, in Du Prel's sense of the word, any more than the fascinating gaze of a man can be considered to prove the possession of some force peculiar to himself. Secondly, Du Prel speaks of magnetic experiments on sleeping persons, *i.e.*, on persons who did not know they were being magnetized. But it must be remarked that sleep does

not involve an absolute loss of consciousness; consequently, that suggestion, in the psychological sense, is not impossible in sleep. Thirdly, the same author can magnetize people at a distance, as well as asleep, in which case suggestion is also supposed to be excluded. Fourthly, he says that plants can be magnetized and their growth thus influenced, as is said of the fakirs (*cf.* p. 216). Fifthly, the magnetic force can be passed on to inanimate objects, which then have the same effect as the magnetizer. Sixthly, Du Prel brings forward the super-normal thought-transference, which I shall shortly discuss, in proof of animal magnetism.

The magnetic influence is used by means of mesmeric passes, by touch, by fixed gaze of operator and subject, by breathing on the subject (Baréty), and some think by concentration of thought and will on the desired result (Puységur, Nasse).

The mesmeric passes described on p. 22 are most generally used. Much information about the direction of the passes can be found in the books of the mesmerists. The effect is supposed to be different according as the passes are upwards or downwards, or made with the back or palm of the hand, apart from suggestion. The right and left sides have different effects. The mesmerists all speak much about the polarity of the magnet, and Fludd, Hell, and Mesmer supposed there was a similar polarity in men. The same thing has been asserted more recently by Chazarain, Dècle, Durville, De Rochas, and Baréty. But I find such opposed views among the different investigators about the distribution of the poles that for the present I ascribe the supposed polarity to unconscious habit.

The mesmerists have put forth many theories to

explain this personal influence. I pass over most of them for brevity's sake. But I will mention those of Mesmer, because many false views are widespread about them. He says the whole universe is filled with a fluid which is more subtle than ether, just as ether is more subtle than air, and air than water. This fluid conducts vibrations just like ether, air, and water. As the vibrations of the light-ether cause light, and those of air cause sounds, so the vibrations of this universal fluid cause other phenomena. The mutual influence which the heavenly bodies undisputedly exercise on each other and the earth are caused by the vibrations of this fluid. One animal body influences another by means of the vibrations of this fluid. Mesmer called this animal magnetism.

This theory of Mesmer's is often confused with another theory of a fluid. Mesmer was thinking of a universally extended fluid. Another theory supposes a fluid in the nerves, which is called outwards by movement. This is the assertion of Albrecht von Haller, the famous physiologist of the last century, who established his priority to Mesmer, although their theories are by no means identical. These are not mere notions invented and defended by swindlers and fools. Many clever men—A. von Humboldt, for example—thought that a force in the nervous system could produce effects at a distance, if not at a great distance. The well-known physician and anatomist, Reil, held a like view. In any case the mesmerists had the support of eminent scientists, who supposed a nervous fluid surrounding men. Mesmerism has even quite lately found some adherents among eminent men of science. Ed. von Hartmann is a convinced adherent of it, and founds his belief on personal experience.

I shall pass over the other theories of animal magnetism, merely mentioning that many persons did not believe in the universal fluid.

The mesmerists maintain that sleep need not always be induced before a person can be magnetically influenced ; that the subjects may be thoroughly awake ; and that this is the distinction between mesmerism and hypnotism. But it should be said that there is by no means always a true sleep in hypnotism. It is evident that the old mesmerists knew the light hypnotic stages well; they called them magnetic states. The mesmerists also did not use the personal methods exclusively ; they used inanimate objects for magnetizing, such as the *baquet* of Mesmer and Puységur's favourite magnetized tree. They thought that the magnetic force passed into the object from the magnetizer. But when this was not the case they were not at a loss. When no magnetizer has touched the object, as is the case in the method of Braid, then (as Moricourt thinks) the fluid of the subject is reflected from the object gazed at, and he is affected by his own fluid.

So-called animal magnetism has been made of practical importance by its use by healing magnetizers, who are supposed to be able to cure diseases. The utter lack of criticism among them, which makes scientific discussion impossible, obliges me to renounce the attempt to give details, though I am convinced that not one professional magnetizer has yet proved that he possesses any particular power unexplained by suggestion. On the other hand, many authors—*e.g.*, Göler von Ravensburg—have pointed out great sources of error, so that childlike faith would be required to take their assertions seriously.

The phenomena of thought-transference, mental suggestion, telepathy, or, as Mayerhofer calls it telæsthesia, are related to animal magnetism, and

are often spoken of in connection with it. Telepathy means the transference of thoughts, feelings, sensations, &c., from a person A. to a person B. by some means other than the recognized sense perceptions of B. Consequently such thought-reading is altogether excluded, in which one person guesses the thought of another by means of the tremors in his muscles, *i.e.*, by a recognized kind of perception. Telepathy has a certain relation to mesmerism (Ochorowicz).

In making the experiments, the person B., who is to guess the thoughts of A., is often mesmerized by A., as this is supposed to make the transference easier. Some English experimenters, Guthrie in particular, have made experiments when both persons were quite awake. The transference is supposed to be caused merely by a strong concentration of thought on the part of the agent. In the same way the subject feels the agent's sense perceptions. If A. is pricked, B. feels it; if A. tastes salt, B. tastes it, &c. It is also said that A. can make B. act, merely by concentrating his thoughts on what B. is to do. Others think that it is the concentration of A's. will on B. which causes the action. Perronnet even maintains that it is possible to influence the pulse and cause vasomotor changes telepathically, by an effort of will. The nearer A. is to B. the better, but the phenomena are said to have been observed when subject and agent were separated by several *kilometres*. It is said to be even possible to hypnotize certain people at long distances by concentration of thought; such experiments are said to have succeeded at Havre. Among authors who vouch for the reality of telepathy, and whose experiments deserve consideration, I mention Charles Richet, Ochorowicz, Pierre Janet, Gibert, F.

Myers, A. Myers, Gurney, Birchall, Guthrie, and Max Dessoir. However, these experiments raise some doubts. Those published by Du Prel, Schrenck-Notzing, Mensi, and Welsch, contain so little information about the conditions of the experiments that it is difficult to weigh the question.

Clairvoyance is the perception of things distant either in time or in space. Belief in it is as old as history; Du Prel reminds us of the Oracles. The prophecies of the Pythia at Delphi show that it was even then believed in. From what has come down to us in history it seems that the state of the Pythia was like deep hypnosis, although they probably used toxic methods also; Kluge and Ed. von Hartmann think that the state was somnambulism. It was the same thing with the Sibyl of Cumæ.

The mesmerists think clairvoyance and the transposition of the senses of which I shall shortly speak are phenomena to be found in magnetized subjects. It is not certain whether Mesmer himself knew of the phenomena; but it appears from one of his letters (published by Du Potet) that he was acquainted with them, but did not enter into them, because they appeared to him inexplicable. Most of the commissions which have investigated clairvoyance have failed; but some great minds—Schopenhauer, for example—have believed in it. Even Braid, about whose views there are so many mistaken opinions, believed in clairvoyance. This must be mentioned, because from Preyer's representation of Braid's teaching we should be obliged to conclude that he denied clairvoyance. I should explain the passage in Braid's Neurypnology, p. 21, in quite the opposite sense. Braid thought clairvoyance proved, though he had never seen it and

could not induce it himself; but he thought that a number of those who vouched for its reality were scientific and truth-loving enough to be believed; he expressly says so, and there can be no doubt about it. The magnetic state in which such phenomena as clairvoyance, thought-transference, &c., are found, is sometimes called somnambulism [1] by the mesmerists.

In previsional clairvoyance forthcoming events are foretold; in spatial clairvoyance things are seen which are so placed in space that normally they would be invisible; they are either separated from the seer by some non-transparent substance, or they are too far off to be seen. In Paris, somnambulists are often made use of in diagnosing disease; this is a kind of spatial clairvoyance. One common experiment is to make the somnambulist diagnose his own disease, foretell its course, and mention the drugs to be used.

In transposition of the senses, stimuli, which normally would only affect a particular organ of sense, affect some other part of the body. For example, letters are said to be read by means of the skin, instead of the eyes, without a heightening of the sense of touch, such as is found in the blind. On the contrary, the part of the skin concerned is supposed to be stimulated by the light rays, even without direct contact, and when there is no hyperæsthesia of feeling. The supposed transposition of the senses is thus distinguished from hyperæsthesia of the sense of touch.

[1] Consequently the word somnambulism is used in several senses: 1. One of Charcot's stages is often called somnambulism. 2. The school of Nancy calls that hypnotic state somnambulism in which there is loss of memory after waking. 3. Some identify hypnotism with somnambulism. 4. Somnambulism is a natural sleep in which there are actions and movements. 5. The mesmeric state described above is called somnambulism.

One of the most commonly mentioned phenomena is reading or hearing with the pit of the stomach. I have seen a person who was supposed to read with his nose, even at a distance of several feet. When his nose was covered with wadding he failed. It is tolerably certain that he saw with his eyes; for though they appeared to be covered with wadding and bandaged, Braid has pointed out that such bandaging is of very doubtful use.

I will here mention some experiments of Heidenhain's which are generally misunderstood, and which at any rate may be easily misunderstood. He maintained that his subjects repeated whatever he said to them when a stimulus was applied to their stomachs; it was necessary to speak close to the stomach to stimulate it. He even said that the part could be exactly defined, and that it was the region of the stomach. According to him the *vagus* nerve was set vibrating and the sound centres were stimulated, and thus a sound was made which exactly corresponded to the one heard; but he thought the sound was heard by the ear and not by the stomach, the nerves of which merely stimulated the sound centres and thus induced imitation of what was heard by the ear. It might be concluded from many accounts of Heidenhain's experiments that he thought his subjects heard with their stomachs, but nothing was further from his thoughts. I have said on p. 81 that Heidenhain was probably wrong in his conclusions.

The law of the individual capacity of the sense organs[1] would be violated by transposition of the senses. But I do not think the thing is proved.

[1] According to this law each organ of sense has its own appropriate stimulus, which has no effect on any other organ, *e.g.*, the eye is stimulated by light, but not the sense of touch or the stomach.

The belief in the action of the magnet on human beings is very old. The Magi of the East used it for curing diseases, and the Chinese and Hindoos used it long ago. Albertus Magnus in the thirteenth century, and later Paracelsus, Van Helmont, and Kircher also used it, as well as the astronomer and ex-Jesuit Hell of Vienna at the end of the eighteenth century. Mesmer is said to have heard from him of its effect upon men, and he also used it at first (p. 5). Even then many doctors—*e.g.*, Deimann, of Amsterdam—denied the therapeutic action of the magnet, and asserted, as others do at present, that brass plates did as well. Reil, the well-known physician, used the magnet therapeutically; in 1845 Reichenbach asserted that some sensitive persons had peculiar sensations when they were touched by a magnet. He also said that they saw light—the so-called *Od* light—at the poles of the magnet: an assertion that was supposed to be disproved, but which has lately been again made by Barrett, in London. Maggiorani, in Italy, has lately contended for the therapeutic use of the magnet (Belfiore), and quite recently the school of Charcot has asserted the influence of the magnet on certain individuals.

I have already spoken of the application of the magnet for inducing hypnosis, as well as of the action of the hypnoscope.

With regard to the action of the magnet during hypnosis, the phenomena of transference must first be mentioned. According to the school of Charcot, transference means that certain phenomena, influenced by some æsthesio-genetic expedient, particularly the magnet, change the place of their appearance. Charcot says that such phenomena are seen in hysterical patients. Thus, contractures on the right side can be

transferred to the left by the magnet. Charcot, as well as a number of other experimenters, among them Preyer, thinks these phenomena quite proved, while in Germany a mental factor has been called in to account for them. It was supposed that the subject's expectation produced the effect and not the magnet; and that (according to Westphal) sealing-wax, bones, &c., produced the same result, provided only that the subject expected it. The school of Charcot say that this transference takes place in hypnosis as well as in the waking state. The laws which Binet and Féré have laid down about it are as follows: When lethargy on one side of the body and catalepsy on the other have been induced by closing the subject's eyes, the approach of a magnet causes lethargy on the cataleptic side, and on the lethargic side catalepsy. In the same way, when the state is somnambulistic on one side and cataleptic or lethargic on the other, the magnet causes transference. But also, in each particular hypnotic state, symptoms can be transferred by the magnet from one side to the other, *e.g.*, the individual contractures in lethargy, and particular postures of the limbs in catalepsy. In somnambulism, contractures as well as hallucinations of one side, and hemianæsthesiæ, can be transferred in the same way. Binet and Féré say that when hypnotic subjects write with the right hand, they reverse the direction of the writing under the influence of the magnet and write at the same time with the left hand.

Another method of influencing with the magnet is called polarization. It is a reversal of a functional state (Belfiore). For example, the magnet is supposed to resolve a contracture induced by suggestion (motor polarization). It can banish a suggested hallucination and can change the mental pictures of colours into

their complementaries. If a subject believes he sees blue, he thinks he sees yellow when the magnet is brought close to him (sensory polarization). The magnet is said to change happiness into sadness (mental polarization). When a reversal of the state takes place, *e.g.*, when "blue" is turned into "yellow," *i.e.*, into its complementary colour, then this is called polarization in a narrower sense, and an arbitrary change of state, *i.e.*, the changing of "yellow" into "red" is called "dispolarization" (Lombroso, Ottolenghi). Binet and Féré are the authors of these experiments, which are confirmed by Bianchi and Sommer, whose experiments, however, offer no guarantee that sufficient precautions were taken; at least I have found nothing concerning this point in their publications. Lombroso and Ottolenghi also affirm the phenomena of polarization.

The phenomena of mental polarization were carefully examined by a special committee of the Medical Congress at Padua. They were not confirmed; at least, they could not be referred to the action of the magnet. Tanzi especially opposes them, and thinks they are to be referred to unconscious and unintentional suggestion.

Venturini and Ventra made a therapeutical experiment in connection with these phenomena. They say they conquered a fixed idea, an auto-suggestion in the waking state, by means of the magnet. Some experiments of Raggi belong to this class; he says that the approach of a magnet in hypnosis often causes subjective discomfort. In other cases the magnet is said to have put an end to the hypnosis.

A third possible way of influencing the hypnotic subject by the magnet is given by Tamburini and Seppilli. They think that when the magnet is brought close to the pit of the stomach it influences the

respiratory movements. Later on, Tamburini and Righi found that other metallic bodies produced the same effect; the strength of the effect depended, however, on the size of the metal. The electro-magnet is said to have the same effect whether the stream is open or closed; Tamburini supposes later that it is only the temperature of the magnet which has the effect, and that the magnetic force may have no influence.

In conclusion, there are Babinski's experiments, founded on a union of true magnetism and animal magnetism. If a hypnotized subject and a sick person are set back to back, a magnet put between them will cause the sick person's symptoms to pass over to the hypnotized subject. Hysterical dumbness and contractures have been thus transferred. But symptoms of organic disease, *e.g.*, of disseminated sclerosis have also been transferred in this way. As a matter of course the phenomena must not be caused by suggestion. The hypnotic subject must not know what the sick person's symptoms are. Luys made such experiments with the same result.

All these actions of the magnet are very enigmatical, and my personal conviction is that the observations were erroneous. But it is certainly singular that the action of the magnet should have been asserted by so many authors at so many different times.

Little can be safely said in explanation of its effect. Obersteiner supposes that there may be a magnetic sense, which may come into activity during hypnosis, and which is, perhaps, localized in certain terminal organs of perception whose functions are still unknown.

The action of drugs at a distance is at the present

moment supposed to be disproved, though some authors still assert it. This also is no new thing. The belief has often arisen that certain persons could find water or veins of metal with a divining-rod, through some influence of the water or minerals at a distance. Burq's *metalloscopie* and *metallothérapie*, in which, however, there was contact with the metals, was the same sort of thing.

Certain persons were supposed to be influenced by particular metals—copper, for example—which even caused symptoms of disease to disappear. The later investigations on the action of drugs at a distance apparently proved that certain drugs in hermetically closed tubes would, when brought close to human beings, act in the same way as if they were swallowed. Thus, strychnine was supposed to cause convulsions, ipecacuanha vomiting, opium sleep, alcohol drunkenness, &c. The experiments were first made by Grocco in Italy, and Bourru and Burot in Rochefort. They experimented with both waking and hypnotized people; Luys repeated the experiments with hypnotized subjects and confirmed them; so did Duplouy and Alliot. Luys went further; he even found distinctions, according as the ipecacuanha was applied to the right or left sides.

It is known that these experiments have been repeated in other quarters, *e.g.*, by Jules Voisin, Forel, Seguin, and Laufenauer, without result; Luys brought the subject before the French Academy of Medicine, which appointed a commission (Brouardel, Dujardin-Beaumetz, and several others) to test the question in the presence of Luys; they came to a conclusion opposed to his. Seeligmüller has confuted the experiments in a much better and more scientific way, which appears to me the only proper one for coming to a decision.

It consists of examining the conditions of the experiments; the reports of commissions have no particular value. When we consider the history of animal magnetism we see that commissions always find what they wish to find; the result is always what they expect. Commissions, in fact, are much influenced by auto-suggestion.

Although I have spoken of a number of enigmatical phenomena in this chapter, I have not done so because I wish to maintain their reality; I should expressly state that this is not the case. I thought it necessary to mention them briefly, on account of their connection with the history of hypnotism. It was further necessary to point out the many sources of error in such experiments.

One important condition in such experiments is that every word uttered should be taken down by some person present for the purpose. One apparently unimportant word may be enough to justify the chief objection made to such experiments—*i.e.*, suggestion.

And there is an absence of criticism in most of them. When a subject reads in a closed book, and it is not proved that he was unacquainted with it previously, I think it is at least *naïve* to speak of clairvoyance. When the magnet causes transference in subjects who know that the magnet is supposed to cause transference, it should be proved that the subjects could not know of the presence of the magnet through their organs of sense. When the approach of the magnet changes a subject's perception of "blue" into "yellow," let it be proved that he did not know the magnet was near, for a properly "trained" subject knows that the magnet is supposed to change his perceptions of colour. When it is asserted that drugs in closed tubes

have an effect, Bernheim's conditions should be observed, the chief of which is that no one in the room should know the contents of the tube. When it is asserted that some persons can magnetize others by means of a particular force, let suggestion be excluded. The impression that A. makes upon B. is often impossible to calculate, and when A. can influence B., but C. cannot, it should be shown that A. does not know whether B. or C. is magnetizing him. This is of course very important; for there is no doubt that some people, by the manner in which they play their part and by a thorough knowledge of the *technique* of suggestion, can influence subjects who are refractory to others. It by no means follows that they possess a peculiar magnetic force; suggestion will explain it.

The chief sources of error in the experiments described in this chapter are as follows:—

1. Intentional simulation on the part of the subject in or out of hypnosis. A simulation of hypnosis is less to be feared, because if a person saw without using his eyes, it would not matter whether he was in hypnosis or not; the main point is the seeing. But even when there is hypnosis, the experimenter is not protected from simulation on the subject's part, because lying and fraud are possible even in deep hypnosis.

2. Unintentional simulation, if I may use an expression which is really contradictory. For example, the subject hears something, and is not conscious that the impression has been made on the usual organ of this sense; as is the case when subjects themselves believe they hear with their stomachs. Or transference happens, when the subject has been induced by training to produce this phenomenon whenever a magnet is brought near him. The subject pays no attention to the approach of the magnet, and is not

really conscious of it, and yet the effect appears. In the same way the subject in thought-transference learns to guess others' thoughts from many little signs, but is not conscious that he does so. The involuntary tremor of the muscles which every one has when he concentrates his thoughts strongly, and which betrays his thoughts to the subject, seems to me a great point in these cases; Wernicke in particular has pointed out this source of error.

It should be especially guarded against in clairvoyance, because persons present, who can see the thing which the clairvoyant is to see without using his eyes, may give indications by involuntary muscular movements, &c. Even Göler v. Ravensburg, who is generally so practical, does not enough consider the importance of this point.

3. The probability of chance success. As many experiments fail, it should be considered whether the number of successful ones exceeds probability.

4. Coincidence. *E.g.*, a command given in thought may be obeyed, because by chance, or for some reason, experimenter and subject think of the same thing. In telepathy the first order thought of is nearly always that the right arm should be raised. This source of error is both great and interesting. It has lately been carefully examined by a member of the American branch of the Society for Pyschical Research, C. S. Minot. Thus it has been discovered that every one prefers certain figures, &c., which recur strikingly often, even when the choice is left open. Now, when in a telepathic experiment one person is to divine a number thought of by another, it would be necessary to discover if they prefer the same figures, if they have the same "number habit." This must also be weighed in experiments with cards, in

which it appears to me the ace of hearts is very often chosen. It is evident that great care must be exercised in drawing conclusions, and that the study of "mysterious" phenomena leads to the recognition of important laws.

5. Hyperæsthesia of the subject's organs of sense often allows him to perceive things imperceptible to others.

6. The increased power of drawing conclusions, which I have spoken of before, must be taken into consideration.

Münsterberg supposes that in thought-transference the agent's strong concentration of thought may throw him into a hypnotic state, and that in this state he may simply tell the subject what he is thinking of, without remembering it afterwards. I have myself made and watched numerous experiments, and cannot think the supposition just. Wernicke's supposition is just as doubtful; he thinks that different thoughts induce different effluvia from the skin, from which a properly trained subject can discover what the agent is thinking about.

When the published experiments are criticized by the rules given above, very few are left which are worthy of serious consideration. These are chiefly the experiments in thought-transference of Guthrie and Birchall, published by the Society for Psychical Research. I could discover no sources of error in them. As conscious deception is excluded, the supposition that the experiments did not really take place as published is out of the question. However, even here there was no regular registrar of the proceedings; and besides, I am subjectively convinced that some sources of error were overlooked, and that suggestion was somehow or other called into play.

Perhaps somebody else may be able to discover these. In any case the members of the society are too scientific and too honourable not to recognize sources of error which are pointed out.

There is nothing to be said against the present examination of inexplicable things. Almost all great steps in natural science have been made by some one who had the courage to contest existing views, in spite of the danger of looking ridiculous. Harvey was obliged to struggle with the prejudices of his colleagues for years before the circulation of the blood was accepted. The fall of meteors was long denied. Modern anatomy was founded by Andreas Vesalius, who fought the prejudices of his time often by improper methods. The fact that a thing is contrary to known laws ought not to prevent its being examined. The contradiction is often merely apparent, and even the laws of nature change from day to day, as Virchow has said. Theories never precede facts; observation first, and then theory. The electric current does not contract muscles because the book says so; the book says so because the current causes the contraction. As Herbert Spencer explains, experience comes first, and then theory.

Everybody may not care to approach this subject; but they should not blame others for their unprejudiced investigations. So long as science does not examine everything, practically and without prejudice, the great delusions of which animal magnetism, &c., makes use, will continue to exist. When careful examination has shown the sources of error, charlatanism will have lost its chief support. The indifference of science has always been the mainstay of charlatanism. The dread that many people have

of investigating things of evil reputation is the chief support of imposture and error, and yet how much can be done to suppress them by a careful investigation of even what is improbable. The real enlightenment of the people can only be attained in this way.

It is incomprehensible to me that even scientific men should call those who interest themselves in hypnotism marvel-mongers. Any one who examines the question seriously will find, on the contrary, that the latest hypnotic experiments explain in a natural way much that has been called strange and supernatural. Stigmatization, for example, and automatic writing, which seems to be almost unknown in most scientific circles, and for this reason, and for want of scientific examination, is a powerful support to spiritualism and superstition. The spiritualists think that automatic writing proves some external force, because a work showing design, and independent of the consciousness of the writer, can only be produced by an external force or a spirit. But thanks to the investigations of Taine, F. Myers, Gurney, Pierre Janet, and Max Dessoir, automatic writing has now received another explanation, as table-turning did through Faraday. It is the same with many other phenomena which have been pressed into the service of superstition.

Whoever reads the writings of the magnetic healers and spiritualists will see how bitter they are against the investigators of hypnotism, and how angry the professional magnetizers become about suggestion, which takes the ground from under their feet (Forel). Truly great men try to avoid dogma and *à priori* conclusions, in spite of scientific doubts. If they cannot examine themselves, they yet consider a scientific examination, even of the improbable necessary. An

example which Delbœuf brings forward may be mentioned. Darwin once wished, it is said, to examine the influence of music on the growth of plants, because such an influence had been talked of before him, and he therefore made some one play the bassoon for several days, close to some planted beans. If this anecdote is not true, it is well invented. Examination will conquer superstition sooner than an *à priori* philosophy. The non-recognition of dogma distinguishes science from blind faith, but to say a fact is impossible because it is opposed to the laws of nature is to dogmatize.

We should be careful, besides, not to make the mistake of claiming supernatural powers for ourselves and denying them to others. When—as happened to me—an otherwise scientific man, X., of Berlin, said that the subjects of Forel and Bernheim were impostors, without having seen them, and without offering proof, he made the mistake of claiming clairvoyance for himself, though he denied its existence. I have often seen such self-contradictions. Knowledge of the laws of nature is still in its infancy. Have the elementary mental processes yet been explained? Has any one ever explained how an ovum, fertilized but soulless, develops into a being with a soul? Has it been explained how the brain moves the muscles by means of the nerves? Do we know why an apple falls to the ground? The most elementary processes are inexplicable wherever we look, and most people only do not think them inexplicable because they see them every day. Some one has justly said that dreams, as well as hypnotism, might be called an extravagant fancy, if they did not happen every day.

In spite of the progress which the exact sciences have made, we must not for a moment forget that the

inner connection between the body and the mental processes is utterly unknown to us. Under these circumstances we should not refuse to examine the apparently inexplicable. Let us, however, impose severe conditions, and not accept any facts on authority without proof.

INDICES.

I.

INDEX OF CONTENTS.

The large figures point to the most important paragraphs.

Academy, Berlin, 59
„ Bavaria, 5
„ Paris, 11, 14, 215, 329, 371
Accommodation, spasm of, 90
Acne pustules, 119
Acting, 135, 165, 278, 279
Activity, mental, 58, 123, 160 *etc.*, 174, 182, 198, 212, 375
Acts, compulsory, 155, 244
„ dynamogenetic, 270
„ habitual, 171, 285
„ impulsive, 156
Æsthesiogenesis, 367
Age, 41, 133, 134, 136
Agoraphobia (dread of open spaces), **58**, 316
Agraphia (inability to write), 131
Aïssaoua, 32
Alcohol, 207, 371
Alcoholism, 41, 316, 332
Alert stage, 49
Allochiria, 96
Allopathy, 328
Amaurosis, 98
Amnesia (loss of memory), 49, 50, **123** *etc.*, **129** *etc.*, 137, 139, 141, 142, 143, 146, 147, 149, **160**, 167, 201, 210, 213, 242, 244, 247, 251, 254, 264, 284, 285, 319, 335, 336, 339, 349, 350, 352
Anæmia, 131
Anæsthesia (loss of feeling), 98, 160, 281. *See* Analgesia
Analgesia (insensibility to pain), 45, 49, 75, **104**, **105**, 116, 237, 238, 279, 281, 294, 318, 329, 330, 331, 359. *See* Surgery
Anatomy, 296, 376
Anger, 106, 181
Animals, experiments with, 15 213 *etc.*, 263, 359
Animal-tamer, 216
Antipathy, 162
Antipyrin, 300
Aperients, 109, 202
Aphasia (loss of speech), 84, 131, 132, 144, 159, 188. *See* Stammering, Dumbness
Aphonia (loss of voice, not to be confounded with loss of speech), 316
Apoplexy, 266, 318, 321

Appetite, loss of, 105, 316
Articulations, rheumatism of the, 318
Associations, 54, 92, 103, **160**, 164, 198, 254, 268, 351. *See* Reproduction
Association, fibres of, 268
„ of ideas, dreams from, 195
Astrology, 4
Ataxy, locomotor, 99, 100, 280, 294, 300, 318
Attention, 26, 27, 33, 40, 44, 45, 68, 165, 167, 194, 198, 203, 211, 226 *etc.*, 234, 235, 256, 238, 239, 264, 270
Attention, expectant, 256
Authority, **222**, 236, 295, 296, 378
Auto-hypnosis, **28**, 127, 208, 216
Automatic movements, 120, 149, 168, 183, 238, 239, 242, 246, 247, 264, 265, 284, 287, 291. *See* Continued Movements
Automatic writing, 185, 247 *etc.*, 348, 351, 377
Auto-somnambulism (spontaneous somnambulism), 283. *See* Somnambulism
Auto-suggestion, 58, 59, 94, 116, 117, 129, 190, 232, 306, 307, 316, 319, 320, 323, 332, 369, 372
Awakening, 146, 147, 151, 172, 176, 207, 278. *See* Waking, method of

Balassa's method with horses, 216
Baquet, the, 5, 6, 362
Bathing, treatment by, 301
Belladonna, 299
Biceps, the, 314
Biomagnetism. *See* Magnetism, animal
Bladder, the, 112, 113
Blindness, 98
Blood, circulation of, 109, 376
„ contained in brain, 270, 271
Bowels, secretion of, 112
„ action of, 109, 112, 112, 140
Braid's method, *see* Fixed attention, method of
Buddhists, 31
Burns, wounds from, 115, 116

Canals, semi-circular (part of the internal ear, injury to which causes abnormalities of movement), 215
Capsula interna (series of fibres in the brain which conducts the voluntary motor impulses, among others, from the cerebral cortex to the periphery), 266
Carbolic acid, 300
Catalepsy, 7, 13, 14, 46, **67**, 68, 71, 87, 88, 90, 108, 113, 166, 168 *etc.*, 188, 207, 211, 282, 293
Catalepsy, stages of, 49, **75** *etc.*, 214, 279, 280, 367
Cataleptoid phenomena, 78, 216
Cataplexy (paralysis from fright), 214
Catatony (of Kahlbaum), (mental disorder, with cataleptic phenomena in the muscles), 206
Catholic Church, 12, 117
Centres, sub-cortical, 263, 270, 307
Changes, organic, 113 *etc.*, 327
Character, 56, 95, 171, 325
„ differences of, 26, 43, 172, 325
Charcot, school of, 15, 16, 20, 75, 76, 79, 82, 83, **275**, 276, 353, 365, 367

Charcot's letter, 314, 315
„ stages, 49, 76 *etc.*, 189, 206, 269, 353, 365
Charité, hospital, Berlin, 8
Children, 41, 223, 253, 288, 331, 358, 359
Chinese, 367
Chloroform, 35, 46, 207, 299, 311, 330, 336
Chorea (St. Vitus' dance), 316, 331
Clairvoyance, 8, 9, 72, 99, 163, **364**, **365**, 372, 373, 378
Clock, mental (Kopfuhr), 250
Clonus, 63
Coincidence, 374
Cold-water cure, 294, 317
Collapse (sudden weakness of the heart), 299, 328
Colour-blindness, 98
Colour, sense of, 98, 280, 281
Combined methods, 34
Commissions, 6, 11, 334, 364, 369, 372
Compulsion, 153, 154, 159, 350
Conclusions, false, 301, 302, 314, 315
Congress at Paris, the, 19
Conjunctiva, 98
Consciousness, 95, 98, 124, 139, 171 *etc.*, 179, 183, 185, 193, 199, 218, 222, 239, 243, 258, 263 *etc.*, 266, 270, 284, 285, 332, 345, 346. *See* Dream-consciousness and Memory
Consciousness, disturbance of, 167, 170, 204
Consciousness, double, 128, **239** *etc.*, 348, 350
Consciousness, dream, 228, **231** *etc.*, 237, 240, 254 *etc.*
Consciousness, loss of, 76, 78, 79, **167** *etc.*, 170, 203, 254, 336 *etc.*, 339, 341, 359
Consciousness, primary, 240, 245 *etc.*
Consciousness, secondary, 240, 241, 245, 246, 248 *etc.*, 253
Consciousness, severance of, 345 *etc.* *See* Double consciousness
Consciousness, spheres of, 245
Contact, 1, 2, 5, 29, 30, 67, 163
Contractures, 61, 63, 64, **68**, 70 *etc.*, 76 *etc.*, 87, 88, 108, 166, 199, 209, 257, 276, 277, 279, 283, 294, 359, 367, 370
Convergence, 29, 72, 281
Corium, 117
Cortex, cerebral, 108, 263 *etc.*, 272, 307
Credulity, 221 *etc.*, 236, 237
Crimes against hypnotic subjects, 334 *etc.*, 350
Crimes by hypnotic subjects, 337 *etc.*, 350
Crises, 305
Cures, 2, 4, 5, 9, 118, 308, 323, 324, 367. *See* Medicine
Cures, miraculous, 291 *etc.*, 325
Cures, sympathetic, 4

Damages, legal, 342, 343
Dæmon of Socrates, 255
Deaf-mutism, 324
Deafness, 98, 186, 305
Deep stage, 49
Dehypnotization, *see* Waking
Delirium tremens, 207
Depolarization, 369
Dervishes, 32
Diseases, nervous, 207
„ organic, 317, 318, 321
Disease, Thomsen's, 207
„ mental, 3, 195, 202, **204**, **205**, 273, 274, **316**, 317, 339, 341
Disgust, 104
Distrust, 42, 321
Disturbances, vaso-motor, 276, 281, 283. *See* Flushing
Divining-rod, the, 371

Dogma, 172, 293, 377
Donatism, 49
Dreams, 37, 93, 124 *etc.*, 140, 147, 161, 176, 177, 194 *etc.*, 204, 240, 262, 303, 316, 333, 378. *See* Dream consciousness
Dreams caused by stimulation of nerves, 194, 195, 196, 204
Drugs, 7, 292, 298, 299, 300, 307, 309, 311, 312, 317, 321, 326, 328, 355
Drugs, action of, at a distance, 357, 370 *etc.*
Dumbness, 22, 209, 358, 370

Ears, singing in, 316
Echolalie, 64
Ecstasy, 32, 117, 127
Eczema, 318
Education, 172, 331, 332. *See* Training
Egyptians, 12, 291
Electricity, 31, 89, 263, 304, 312, 317, 321, 322, 328
Electro-biology, 13, 209
Enuresis nocturna, 316
Epidermis, 119
Epilepsy, 207
Error, 346
Error, sources of, 373 *etc.*
Etats mixtes, 78
Ether, 35, 207, 330
Exaggeration, 279
Exhibitions, public, 55, 355, 356
Exophthalmos (protrusion of the eyeballs), 73
Expected effects, 223 *etc.*, 229, **255**, 368
Experimental Psychology, Society for, 19
Experimentum mirabile, 213
Eyelids, *see* Eyes
Eye, the, 22, 23, 28, 33, 50, 51, 52, 71 *etc.*, 76, 93, 95, 99, 100, 175, 228, 233, 279, 286, 287, 288
Eye, the evil, 66
Eyes, watering of, 54, 95, 112. 281

Face, expression of, 93, 106, 131, 149, 164, 181, 211, 278
Fainting, from electrization, 305
Fakirs, 216, 360
Falsehood, 137, 348, 352
Faradization (mode of electrifying), 36, 76
Fascination, 23, 49, **64**, 66, 72, 107, 215, 216, 264, 359
Fatigue, 22, 34, 36, 52, 73, 87, 104, 152
Fear, 108, 122, 158
Feelings, 55
„ common, 104 *etc.*
Feeling, *see* Anæsthesia, Analgesia, Organs of sense, Sense of touch
Fever, therapeutics of, 355
Fixed attention, method of, 21, **28**, 33, 34, 37, 40, 45, 52, 54, 72, 73, 76, 90, 91, 107, 112, 203, 264, 302, 306, 322, 363
Flexibilitas cerea, 74 *etc.*
Fluid, the universal, 4, 30, 361 *etc.*
Flushing, 109, 140, 283. *See* Vaso-motor disturbances
Force, measurement of muscular, 88
Fraud, confession of, 287
„ 47, 72, 99, 165, 183, 223, 260, **273** *etc.*, 353, 373
Freedom, deprivation of, 337
Friendship, 44

Galvanism, 76, 89, 294. *See* Electricity
Galvanometer, the, 89
Gifts made in hypnosis, 337
Globus hystericus, 38
Goetz's vocal experiments, 80

Graphology, 136
Greeks, 291

Habit, 35, 59, 224, 286
Hæmorrhage, 116, 117, 121, 129
Hæmorrhage from uterus, 115, 226
Hallucinations, 92. *See* Sense deceptions
Haschisch, 207
Havre, experiments at, 363
Head, stimulus applied to crown of, 86
Headache, 301, 306, 315, 319
Healing force, 358, 359
Health, injury to, 336. *See* Hypnotism, dangers of
Hearing, the, 29, 165
Heart, action of, **107** *etc.*, 130, 268, 281, 283
Heavenly bodies, 361
Hemianæsthesia (loss of feeling in one half of the body), 116, 275, 368
Hemianopsy (loss of half the field of view), 98
Hemi-hypnosis, 86, 368
Hemiplegia (paralysis of one side), 116, 215, 294
Heredity, 39
Hesychasts, 1
Hetero-suggestion, 58
Hibernation, 216
Hindoos, 216, 250, 367
Histology, 296
History of hypnotism, 1 *etc.*, 139, 292 *etc.*, 329, 380, 334, 367
Homœopathy, 328
Hunger, 105, 130, 140
Hyperæmia (excess of blood), *see* Blood
Hyperæsthesia (increase of sensibility), 92, 99 *etc.*, 163, 313, 321
Hyperexcitability, **75** *etc.*, 279, 282
Hypermnesia (increase of memory), 126, 127, 129
Hypnobat, 12
Hypnoscope, the, 12, 38
Hypnoses, examples of, 21 *etc.*
„ classification of, 49 *etc.*
Hypnoses, groups of, **49**, 50, 91, 106, 124, 158, 170, 176, 177, 178, **192** *etc.*, 193, 209
Hypnosia, 207
Hypnosigenesis (induction of hypnosis), 26, 27, 28 *etc.*, 157, 161, 202, 203, 209 *etc.*, 218, 219, 220, 226 *etc.*, 231, 232, 241, 261, 263, 291, 308
Hypnosis, auto-, 28, 126, 207, 216
Hypnosis, active, 69
„ dangers of, 44, 157, 197, 298 *etc.*, 326, 337 *etc.*, 353
Hypnosis, depth of, 49 *etc.*, 91, 105, 107, 124, 159, 189, 192, 194, 310, 320, 342, 343, 362
Hypnosis, fear of, 326
„ hemi-, 86, 367
„ passive, 70, 107, 169, 201
Hypnosis, psychology of, 53, **122** *etc.*, 218 *etc.*
Hypnosis, stages of, 48 *etc.*, 91
„ tendency to, **38** *etc.*, 48, 306
Hypnotisme, grand, 75
Hypnotisme, petit, 75
Hypnotization, mental methods of, 26, 27 *etc.* *See* Hypnosigenesis
Hypnotization, legal, 347
Hypotaxy, 49
Hysteria, 37, 206, 214, 224, 283, 286, 292, 304, **313** *etc.*, 315, 316, 367
Hysterical attacks, 172, 304, 305, 319

Hystero-epilepsy, 14, 73, 75, 77, 206, 304

Ideas, 54 *etc.*, 161, 221
Ideas, association of, 69, 125, 126, 160, 246, 248, 249, 250. *See* Association
Ideas, change of, 164, 210
„ dominating, 156, 251 *etc.*
Ideas, insane, 316, 345
Illusions, *see* Delusions of the senses
Imagination, 4, 6, 34, 65, 162, 214, 255, 291, 327, 346, 358
Imbecility, 205, 206
Imitation, 23, 24, 26, 64, 84, 187, 188, 208, 227, 264 *etc.* *See* Fascination
Imitation, automatic, 267
„ of sounds (*écholalie*), 84, 85, 89, 102, 188, 366
Imposition of hands, 3
Impotence, 225
Indications, 260 *etc.*, 303
Influence, personal, 1, 2, 5, 44, 163, 234, 358, 359, 360, 373
Inhibition, 256 *etc.*, 271, 272
Injury, physical, 336
Insane, the, 39, 97, 135, 255, 289, 345
Instincts, 55, 106, 253
Intelligence, 39, 40
Intoxication, 137
Ipecacuanha, 371
Itching, 55

Jogis, 1
Jugglers, 56, 57, 96, 156
Jumpers, the, 208

Katharina Emmerich, 117

Lata, 208
Laughter, 70, 257, 285
Law, natural, 357, 376, 378
„ 9, 208, **334** *etc.*, 353, 354
„ civil and criminal, 337, 342 *etc.*
Lethargic stages, 49, 76 *etc.*, 82, 83, 90, 168, 169, 368
Lethargy, 32, 37, 168, 208
„ lucid, 78
Life-spirit (*spiritus vitalis*), 4
Light, the Od, 367
Localization, in time, 123
Louise Lateau, 117, 355
Lourdes, 292, 309
Love, 44, 106, 162

Magic cap, 97
Magi, the, 1, 367
Magnet, 5, 35, 38, 308, 315, 355, 360, 367 *etc.*, 372, 373
Magnetic force, 5, 162, 291, 361, 372. *See* Influence
Magnetic passes, *see* Passes, mesmeric
Magnetic sense, 371
„ sleep, 10, 39, 46, 124, 126, 189, 292, 329, 330, 335, 336, 350, 362
Magnetisers, 6, 29, 64, 66, 139, 163, 362, 377. *See* Mesmerists
Magnetism, animal, 1 *etc.*, 163, 329, 330, 336, 357 *etc.*, 367, 372, 376
Mania, 204, 205, 317
Massage, 294, 312, 317
Medicine, 5, 13 *etc.*, 151, 204, 221, **290** *etc.*, 354, 355, 369
Medulla oblongata, 215
Melancholia attonita, 205
„ 316
Menstruation, disturbances of, 309, 315
Mesmerists, 4 *etc.*, 18, 30, 37, 38, 44, 96, 101, 124, 128, 139, 163, 165, 290, 331, 334, 358, 360, 361, 364, 365

Mesmeric passes, **22**, **29**, **30**, 31, 35, 37, 68, 75, 107, 210, 225, 227, 329, 358, 360
Mesmerism, *see* Magnetism animal
Metabolism, 113, 114
Metalloscopy, 371
Metallo-therapeutics, 371
Meteors, 376
Methods, dangers of various curative, 299
Memory, 22, 25, 41, 48, 49, 124 *etc.*, 148, 149, 167, 180, 192, 210, 220, 230, 237 *etc.*, 238, 239, 245, 249, 251, 253, 264, 268, 284, 286, 287
Memory, delusions of, *see* Suggestions, Retro-active
Memory, loss of (amnesia), 48, 49, 109, **123** *etc.*, **129** *etc.*, 138, 139, 140, 141, 144, 146, 147, 149, 159, 167, 201, 210, 213, 242, 244, 247, 251, 254, 264, 284, 285, 319, 335, 336, 339, 349, 351, 352
Mica panis pills, 109
Miryachit, 208
Miscarriage, 115, 335
Misdemeanours, responsibility for, 345
Misère psychique, 227
Morality, offences against, 334 *etc.*
Morbus hypnoticus, 207, 208
Morphia, 46, 204, 263, 298
Morphinism, 316
Motives, 152, 153, 154, 339, 343
Mouvement psychique, 37
Movement, capacity for, 21, 22, 23, 27, 50, **60** *etc.*, **106** *etc.*, 112, 131, 141, 170, 179, 181, 182, 192, 198, 199, 200, 205, 209, 210, 226 *etc.*, 256, 257, 260, 261, 279, 285, 288, 330
Movements in sleep, 199, 200
„ continued, **69**, 175, 176, 199
Movements, instinctive, 244
Movements, trembling, 285
„ hesitating, 171, 175, 277
Muscle, deltoid (used in moving the arm), 84
Muscles, antagonist (muscles with opposed functions, *i.e.*, flexor as opposed to extensor),
Muscles, involuntary, 107 *etc.*
„ voluntary, 60 *etc.*, *see* Movements
Music, influence of, 66
Myelitis (inflammation of spinal cord), 225
Mysticism, 8, 11, 219, 224, 261, 308, 309, 320, 375, 377, 378

Nerves, stimulation of, *see* Senses, stimulation of
Nervous diseases, 207
Nervousness, 39, 302 *etc.* *See* Neurasthenia
Nervus facialis (nerve of facial movement), 76
Nervus ulnaris (one of the chief nerves of the arm), 76, 83
Nervus vagus (one of the nerves of the stomach), 366
Neuralgia, 316
Neurasthenia, 38, 313, 315, 318
Neuro-muscular excitability, *see* Hyperexcitability
Neuroses, emotional (neuroses caused by mental excitement), 316
Neuroses (nervous diseases without anatomical changes), 207, 313, 316, 317, 324, 327
Nitrite of amyl, 269
Number habit, the, 374
Numbers, favourite, 374

Obedience, automatic, 267
Objectivation des types, *see* Personality, change of
Obstetrics, 330

Od light, 367
Omphalopsychics, 1
Operations, 115, 237. *See* Surgery
Ophthalmoscope, experiments with, 269
Opium, 207, 371
Oracles, 364
Organic diseases, 318, 319, 321
„ changes, 113 *etc.*, 327

Pains, rheumatic, 315
„ ovarian, 313, 315
Pain, loss of, *see* Analgesia
„ 63, 93, 105, 106, 140, 186, 205, 225, 237, 257, 279, 294, 315, 322, 323, 327. *See* Analgesia
Papyrus, the Ebers, 3
Paralyses, 58, 59, 63, 87, 131, 140, 160, 205, 209, 224, 227, 257, 276, 277, 288, 294, 316
Paralyses (paralyses for special acts), 131
Paralyses, reflex, 265
„ traumatic (*i.e.*, caused by external injury), 59
Paralysis from fright, 29, 214
„ general, of the insane (severe form of mental disease with decreasing intelligence and abnormalities of consciousness), 205
Paramnesia (false memory), 130, 139
Paraplegia (paralysis of both sides of the body), 202
Passes, de-mesmerizing, 22
Passes, mesmeric, **22**, 29, **30**, 37, 68, 74, 107, 211, 225, 329, 358, 360
Pathology, 331, 332
Percentage of hypnotizable persons, 39, 47
Perceptions, 230
Personality, 239
Personality, change of, 134, *etc.*, 197
Perversity, sexual, 316
Philosophy, 12, 272
Photographs, experiments with, 102, 103, 140, 158, 260
Phreno-hypnotism, 85, 86
Physiognomy, *see* Face, expression of
Physiology, 14, 60 *etc.*, **221**, 262 *etc.*
Plants, growth of, 216, 360
Points de repère, *see* Points of recognition
Points of recognition, 102, 103, 260
Poison, 364
Polarization, 369, 37
Polarity, 360
Precaution, rules of, 302 *etc.*
Prediction, 1, 130. *See* Clairvoyance
Pressure, sense of, 100
Prism, experiments with, 280, 281
Probability, 374
Processes, judicial, 350
Promises to pay, 337
Property, 337
Pruritus cutanous nervosus (nervous tingling), 316
Psychical Research, Society for, 19, 321
Psychology, 19, 53, 221, 290, 298, 302, 303, 311, 325, 326, 328, **333**
Psychology of hypnosis, 53, **122** *etc.*, 219 *etc.*
Psychological Society, the, 19
Pulse, 107 *etc.*, 250, 363
Punishment, legal, 334 *etc.*
Pupils of eye, 91, 281

Quinine, 294

Railway spine, 318

Rapport, 25, 83, 84, 118, 165, 166, 167, 192, 211, 213, 220, 233, 361
Reaction, time of, 259, 260
Reason, 161
Reflexes, 37, 63, 75 *etc.*, 80 *etc.*, 85, **89**, 90 98, 112, 130, 166, 215, 265, 266
Reflexes, mental, 80, 81
„ physical, 80, 81, 199, 266
Resistance, 151, 166, 171 *etc.*
Respiration, **107**, **108**, 111, 130, 250, 267, 279, 280, 370
Reverie, 193
Rigidity, convulsive, 76, 79
Rules, precautionary, 302 *etc.*

Saliva, secretion of, 111, 283
Salpêtrière, the, 29, 45, 116, 214, 309, 315
School, anthropological, 341
„ classical, 341
„ of Charcot, 14, 20, **75**, 76, 77, 78, 80, **275**, 276, 301, 314, 315
School of Nancy, 15, 20, 41, 47, 77, 81, 89, 118, **275**, **276**, 303, 306, 310, 312
Schools, use of hypnotism in, 331, 332
Sclerosis, multiple (nervous disease with changes in brain and spinal cord), 370
Secretion, 111, 112, 283
Secrets, betrayal of, 347, 348
Self-consciousness, 169, 192, 196, 198
Self-deception, 152, 153, 287, 338, 339
Self-judgment, 176, 177
Self-observation, 154, 155, 220
Self-suggestion, *see* Auto-suggestion
Sense, transposition of, 7, 72, 100, **365** *etc.*, 373
Sense, muscular, 31, 69, 87, 94, 99, 102, 166, 204
Sense, incomplete delusions of, 95, 183 *etc.*, 368
Sense, post-hypnotic delusions of, 150, 151, 160, 254, 255, 339
Sense, negative delusions of, 96, 97, 184 *etc.*, 204, 209, 218, 220, **235** *etc.*, 247, 258
Sense, organs of, 51, 64, 91 *etc.*, 186, 220, 366
Sense, stimulation of, 32, 33 *etc.*, 177, 178, 195, 196, 199, 214, 215, 257, 263, 264, 272, 313
Sense, delusions of, 24, **91** *etc.*, 125, 161, 174, 177, 178, 181, 182, 183, 195, 196, 197, 207, 201, 211, 220, 225, **229** *etc.*, 241, 255, 256, 258, 279 *etc.*, 316, 327, 328. *See* Dream
Sex, 41
Sibyl, 364
Sighing, 52
Signals, counting of, 143, 249
Sight, disorders of, 316
Sleep, 29, 33, 35 ,45, 51, 71, 72, 90, 108, 126, 147, 161, 176, **192** *etc.*, 204 *etc.*, 214, 224, 231 *etc.*, 249, 306, 307, 309. *See* Dream and Dream-consciousness
Sleepiness, 36, 192, 193
Sleeplessness, 224
Smell, sense of, 91, 93, 94, 212
Somnambulism, 7, 14, **49**, 139 157, 166, 178, **200**, 207, 233, 240, 316, 338, 355, 364, **365**
Somnambulists, 199
Somnolence, 49
Sorcerers, 2
Space, sense of, 100
Spasm of accommodation, 69

Speculation, 223
Speech, 64, 182
„ abnormalities of, 62
Spiritualism, 110, 127, 246, 255, 377
Spiritus vitalis, 4
Spontaneity, 177, 178
Stage, deep, 323
Stages, lethargic, 49, 75 *etc.*, 82, 83, 90, 168, 169, 368
Stages, somnambulistic, 49, 75 *etc.*, 82, 85, 280, 368
Stages, Gurney's, 139, 140
„ Charcot's, 49, 76 *etc.*, 189, 206, 269, 353, 365
Stammering, 58, 205, 225, 243, 316
Stars, influence of, 3
State, while obeying post-hypnotic suggestion, 144 *etc.*, 287 *etc.*, 291, 292
State, normal, 128
„ primary, 146
„ secondary, 129, 146
States, transitional, 51, 52, 175, **179** *etc.*, 219, 287, 288
States, waking, 145, 150. *See* Suggestion without hypnosis
Statistics, 38, 48
Sternomastoid (a muscle used in moving the head), 76
Stigmatization, 117, 377
Stomach, pain in, 315
Strychnine, 297, 371
Suggestion, susceptibility to, **54**, **60**, 63, 146 *etc.*, 175, 190, 205, 206, 208, 209, 227, 256, 279, 290, 306, 339, 342, 345, 347, 352
Suggestion, 10, 14, 15, 16, 26, 49, 50, 56, 267, 275, 276, 293, 294, 309, 310, 319, 335, 347, 358, 362, 369, 370, 373, 376. *See* chapter on subject, and sub-divisions, especially in chapter on symptoms.
Suggestion, deferred, 141, 250
Suggestion, cancelling of, 303
„ continuous, 140, 202
Suggestion d'attitude, 54, 180, 187
Suggestion, direct, 56
„ indirect, **56**, 94, 128, 275, 276
Suggestion, mental, *see* Telepathy
Suggestion without hypnosis, 56, 138, 209 *etc.*, 229, 243, 255, 258, 259, 286
Suggestion, hypnotic or intra-hypnotic, 59
Suggestion, post-hypnotic, 45, 59, 63, 134, 137, **139** *etc.*, 169, 172, 173, 183, 190, 207, 219, 220, **242** *etc.*, 279, 287, 306, 319, 330, 336, 338 *etc.*, 347, *etc.*
Suggestion, post-hypnotic, in sleep, 196, 201, 202
Suggestion, pre-hypnotic, 60
„ retro-active, 130, 137, 138, 345, 346
Suggestion, intermediate, 177
„ law of, 54
„ catalepsy by, *see* Catalepsy
Suggestion, therapeutics of, *see* Medicine
Suggestion, method of, 189, 190
Suggestion, verbal, 59, 94, 166, 182, 293, 317
Suggestion, repetition of, 171, 172
Suicide, 337
Sulfonal, 300
Superstition, 333, 377, 378. *See* Mysticism
Surgery, 13, 14, 318, 329 *etc.*
Suspension, treatment by, 300
Swallowing, movement of, 52
Sweat, secretion of, 111, 281, 283

Symptoms, objective, 86, 87, 107, 188, 189, 273 *etc.* *See* Fraud

Tabes dorsalis (locomotor ataxy), 99, 100, 280, 294, 300, 318
Table-turning, 377
Talking in hypnosis, 182, 198, 200
Talking in sleep, 127, 200, 201
Taste, sense of, 93, 94
Teachers, influence of, 44
Tedium, sleep from, 203
„ movements from, 281, 282
Telepathy, 2, 164, 357, **363**, **364**, 374, 375
Telephone, the, 27
Temperature, 29, 109, 113, 140
„ sense of, 29, 30, 93, 100, 225
Temple sleep, 291
Tendons, reflexes of, 58, 76, 77. *See* Reflexes
Terminology, 25, 26, 27, 54, 55, 56
Testimony, 345 *etc.*
Theft, 45, 174
Theory, 218 *etc.*, 360, 361
Therapeutics, *see* Medicine
Thirst, 105, 140
Thought, concentration of, 56, 360, 363, 375
Thought-reading, **55**, **56**, 248, 363, 374
Thought-transference, *see* Telepathy
Time, estimate of, 142, 143, 249 *etc.*
Tisza-Eslar case, the, 346
Training, 59, 77, 79, 95, 129, 139, 142, 181, **186**, 234, 269, 338, 360, 372 *etc.*
Trance, 110, 127
Trance-waking, 89
Transfert, 368, 373, 374
Transitional states, 36, 51, 52, 175, 179 *etc.*, 219, 287, 288
Treatment by baths, 312
Trust, 47, 321
Tuberculosis, 39

Urine, 112
Urticaria (nettle-rash), 119, 120

Vaccination, 294
Vasomotor abnormalities (variations in quantity of blood circulating in an organ), 63, 109, 115, 160, 269, 276
Vasomotor disturbances in the brain, 269, 270
Veille somnambulique, 147, 211
Vegetarians, 206
Vesication, 114, 118 *etc.*, 275
Vespasian, 2
Vessels, 109. *See* Vasomotor disturbances
View, field of, 101
Visions (sense deceptions of sight), 53
Vivisection, 333
Vomiting, 104, 225

Waking, somnambulic, 147, 211
Waking, 35 *etc.*, 93, 125, 140, 148, 169, 208, 303, 304, 316
Warts, 3
Wheals, 119, 120, 121, 283
Will, 28, 56, 58, 62, 80, 87, 160, 170 *etc.*, 192, 193, 213, 242 *etc.*, 257, 263, 268, 275, 281, 283, 287, 311, 332, 337, 338, 346, 349, 363
Will, freedom of, 152 *etc.*, 160, 333, 337, 342, 351
Will, weakness of, 40
Willing-game, the, 55

Wills, 337. 353
Writer's cramp, 316
Writing, mediumistic, 246
„ automatic, 185, 246 *etc.*, 348, 351, 377

Yawning, 208
Yogis, 1

Zoanthropia, 136
Zones hypnofrénatrices, 36
Zones hypnogènes, 30, 46
Zoomagnetism, *see* Magnetism, animal

II.

INDEX OF NAMES.

I shall be obliged to anybody who will send me information for the completion of the following short biographical notices.

A single date in the index means the year in which the author's work on hypnotism, or his most important work, appeared; two dates mean the times of his birth and death. When no date is added, the author's work has almost invariably been published during the last ten years. A dagger is placed after the name when the person in question is dead. The large figures point to the most important paragraphs.

d'Abundo, doctor, Naples, 100
Adamkiewicz, O., prof. of medicine, Cracow, 15
Albertus Magnus, 1193–1280, eminent philosopher, 367
Algeri, G., Italian alienist, 348
Alliot, French doctor, 371
Aristotle, 384–322 B.C.; Greek philosopher, psychologist, natural scientist, 203
Arndt, Rudolph, prof.; alienist, Greifswald, 131, 355
Ashburner, John A., about 1834, doctor, London, 12
Auban, 1865, French doctor, 335
Aupépin, Celicurre de l', magnetizer, 118
Auvard, obstetric physician, Paris, 331
Avé-Lallemant, Friedrich, 1881, jurist, Lübeck, 4, 8
Azam, prof., surgeon, Bordeaux, 13, 128, 329
Azoulay, Léon, French doctor, 260
Babinski, neurologist, Paris, 14, 370
Bäumler, Ch., prof. of medicine, Freiburg, Bohemia, 15, 31
Baierlacher, Eduard, doctor, Nuremberg,† 1889, 18, 322
Baillif, L. E., 1868, French doctor, 46, 141
Bailly, P. R., 1784, 5, 290
Balassa, Constantin, 1828, Austrian cavalry officer, 216
Ballet, Gilbert, *prof. agrégé* of Paris, French neurologist, alienist, and physician, 35, 207
Balzac, Honoré de, 1799–1850, famous French novelist, 19
Barbarin, Chevalier de, 1786, Ostend, 292
Baréty, A., doctor, Nice, 360
Barkworth, Thomas, Chigwell, Essex, 239, 240
Barrett, W. F., prof. of experimental physics, Dublin, 367
Bartels, Ernst, prof., 1812,

physiologist, Breslau, 10, 359
Barth, Adolph, aural surgeon, Berlin, 18
Barth, George, 1852, doctor and magnetizer, London, 111
Barth, Henry, doctor, physician, Paris, 14
Bastian, Adolf, prof. extraordinary, Berlin, founder of modern ethnology, director of the ethnological museum at Berlin, 2, 19, 29, 127, 208, 246
Bazin, prof., 1859, Bordeaux, alienist, 13
Beard, George Miller, 1839–1882, neurologist, New York, 17, 55, 208, 259
Beaunis, prof. of physiology, Nancy, 15, 88, 108, 109, 111, 118, 123, 143, 147, 148, 172, 177, 209, 211, 261, 283, 319
Belfiore, Giulio, 1887, doctor, Naples, 158, 367, 368
Bellanger, Nicolas, 1854, doctor, Paris, 336
Belot, Adolphe, French author, 19
Benavente, David, doctor, Santiago, 12
Benedikt, Moriz, prof. extraordinary and neurologist, Vienna, 15, 35, 126, 308, 337, 285
Bennett, John, 1812 – 1875, physiologist and physician, Edinburgh, 268
Bentivegni, Adolf v., jurist, Berlin, 19, 27, 59, 128, 145, 156, 221, 225, 231, 236, 252, 255, 259, 334, 337, **339**, 340, 342, 343, 344, 345, &c.
Berend, 1860, doctor, Berlin, 14
Berger, Oskar, prof. extraordinary, 1844–1885, neurologist, Breslau, 15, 29, 46, 74, 84, 86, 87, 89, 90, 100, 105, 209, 265, 280, 294
Bergson, H., Clermond-Ferrand, France, 100
Bérillon, Edgar, doctor, Paris, editor of the *Revue de l'Hypnotisme*, 16, 86, 95, 331, 332
Berjon, French doctor, 116, 117
Berkhan, Oswald, doctor, Brunswick, 17
Berna, 1837, magnetizer, Paris, 11
Bernheim, prof. of medicine, Nancy, 15, 17, 27, 28, 33, 34, 39, 46, 47, 49, 50, 67, 69, 82, 107, 138, 139, 168, 169, 192, 209, 221, 234, 246, 267, 270, 271, 280, 281, **290**, **294**, 317, 318, 321, 222, 346, 373, 378
Bert, Paul, 1830, 1886, French physiologist and politician, 31
Bertrand, Alexandre, 1823, doctor, Paris, 10, 46, 96, 130, 165, 188, 234, 302
Bianchi, Leonardo, neurologist, Naples, 369
Bicker, Georg, 1787, doctor, Bremen, 8
Billroth, Theodor, prof., eminent surgeon, Vienna, 300
Binet, Alfred, prof., psychologist, Paris, 14, 28, 85, 102, 103, 118, 131, 184, 230, 235, 280, 281, 368, 369
Binswanger, Otto, prof. extraordinary and alienist, Jena, 15, 158, 190, 301, 302, 321
Birchall, James, secretary of the Literary and Philosophical Society of Liverpool, 364, 375
Bleuler, Karl, alienist and neurologist, director of the Rheinau Nursing Institu-

tion, Zürich, 18, 61, 125, 172, 220
Blum, prof. of philosophy at the Lyceum of St. Omer, 332
Böckmann, Johann Lorenz, 1787, doctor, Carlsruhe, 8
Böllert, Theodor,† 1889, hypnotizer, Charlottenburg, 356
Börner, Paul, 1829–1885, doctor, medical author, and hygienist, Berlin, 15
Bonniot, Paul de, orthodox-Catholic author, 57
Borel, Belgian doctor, 73, 98
Born, G., prof. extraordinary and anatomist, Breslau, 80, 89, 129
Bottey, Ferdinand, doctor, Paris, 38, 47, 111, 270
Bouchut, Ernest, 1875, eminent doctor for diseases of children, Paris, 269
Bourdon, doctor, Méru (Oise, France), 326
Bourneville, neurologist and alienist, Paris, 14
Bourru, prof. of the naval school of medicine, physician, Rochefort, 116, 371
Boursier, A., doctor, Bordeaux, 330
Braid, James, doctor, Manchester, 1795–1860, 12, 13, 26, 28, 33, 34, 41, 54, 71, 72, 79, 85, 86, 88, 92, 100, 101, 107, 108, 128, 180, 192, 209, 220, 225, 268, 293, 329, **364**, 366 (*see* method of fixed attention)
Brandis, Joachim Dietrich, 1762–1845, prof., doctor and court physician in ordinary at Copenhagen, 201
Brémaud, French naval doctor, Brest, 41, 64, 107
Briand, alienist, Paris, 115
Brierre de Boismont, Alexandre, 1798–1881, eminent alienist, Paris, 202, 347
Broca, Paul, 1824–1860, eminent surgeon and physiologist, Paris, 13
Brock, H., doctor, Berlin, 113
Broquier, 1853, surgeon, Marseilles, 335
Brouardel, prof. (leader in medical jurisprudence), Paris, 336, 371
Brown, Thomas, 1778–1820, Scotch physiologist, 54
Brown-Sequard, prof., physiologist, Paris, 270
Brügelmann, doctor, Paderborn, 18
Brugia, prof., alienist, Lucca, Italy, 40
Brullard, French doctor, 192
Bubnoff, N., 1881, Breslau, 263
Budge, Julius, 1885, prof., anatomist and physiologist, Greifswald,† 281
Burckhardt, G., director of the *Maison de Santé*, of Préfargier (Switzerland), 316
Burdach, Carl Friedrich, 1776–1847, prof., Königsberg, celebrated anatomist and physiologist, 198
Burdin, junior, 1837, French doctor, member of the Academy of Medicine, 11
Burot, prof. of the medical school at Rochefort, 111, 116, 371
Burq (also written Burcq), 1823–1884, inventor of *métallothérapie*, 371

Cagliostro, Count Alexander de, 1743–1795; well-known adventurer, wonder-worker, and spirit-seer, 1
Campili, Giulio, Italian jurist, 290
Cappie, James, M.D., 1886, England, 270
Carlsen, Danish doctor, 16
Carnochan, M., Governor in

Cambridge, Massachusetts, U.S.A., 99
Carpenter, William, 1813–1885, physiologist, London, 13, 101, 110, 164, 224, 225, 269
Carus, Carl Gustav, eminent doctor, philosopher, and painter, 12
Casper, Johann Ludwig, 1796–1864, prof. in Berlin, authority on medical jurisprudence, 167
Catlow, English magnetizer, about 1845, 31
Celsus, Roman savant and physician under Augustus, 21
Chalande, doctor, Toulouse, 85
Chambard, French alienist, 30, 35
Charcot, Jean Martin, prof. in Paris, eminent neurologist, 14, 15, 16, 48, 49, 59, 63, **75**, **76**, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 84, 86, 89, 90, 168, 180, 181, 189, 206, 207, 269, 275, 276, 277, 279, 280, 314, 315, 367 (*see* stages and school of Charcot)
Charpentier, prof. of physics, Nancy, 280
Charpignon, 1815–1886, doctor, Orleans, 96, 202, 334
Chazarain, doctor, Paris, 360
Chevreul,† 1889, eminent French chemist more than one hundred years old, 55
Chiltoff, doctor, Charkow, 316
Clairon, Claire Hippolyte, 1723–1803, celebrated French actress, 135
Clarétie, French romance writer, 19
Cloquet, Jules, 1829, surgeon and prof., Paris, 329
Cohn, Hermann, 1880, prof. extraordinary, oculist, Breslau, 90, 98
Collineau, French author, 332
Copin, Paul, French author, 222
Corval, v., doctor, Baden-Baden, 18, 316, 321, 326, 332
Cory, Charles B., Boston, 184
Coste, 1853, director at the school of medicine at Marseilles, 335
Coste de Lagrave, French doctor, 46
Creutzfeldt, Otto, doctor, Harburg, 17
Cullerre, A., French alienist, 135, 156, 222, 268
Cumberland, Stuart, "thought-reader," 55
Cuvier, 1769–1832, eminent naturalist and zoologist, Paris, 9
Cuvillers, Hénin de, 12
Czermak, Johann Nepomuk, 1828–1873, physiologist and laryngologist, Leipzig, 15, 214

Danilewsky, prof. physiologist, Charkow, 214, 215
Danillo, S. N., Russian lecturer, 352
Darling, 1850, 13
Darwin, Charles, 1809–1882, celebrated naturalist, founder of the doctrine of evolution, 378
Debove, *prof. agrégé*, physician, Paris, 105
Dechambre, Amédée, 1812–1886, medical author and doctor, Paris, 7
Dècle, Ch.,† 1888, French engineer, 360
Decroix, French military veterinary-surgeon, 331
Deimann, J. R., about 1775, doctor, Amsterdam, 367
Dekhtereff, hygienist, St. Petersburg, 331

Delacroix, Frédéric, member of the *Cour d'Appel*, Besançon, 353
Delbœuf, J., prof. at Liege, psychologist, 16, 47, 49, 50, 52, 82, 85, 118, 125, 130, 139, 143, 144, 147, 188, 189, 195, 212, 241, 283, 338, 350, 356, 378
Deleuze, 1753–1835, naturalist, Paris, 10, 96, 128
Delphin, G., prof. of Arabic at Oran, Algeria, 31
Demarquay, Jean, 1811–1875, French surgeon, 14, 111, 206, 347
Descourtis, French doctor, 64, 86
Desjardins, Arthur, French lawyer, 340
Deslon (also d'Eslon), Charles,† 1786, physician in ordinary to the Count of Artois, doctor, Paris, 6, 291, 305, 334
Despine, Prosper, alienist and psychologist, Marseilles, 15, 264, 335
Dessoir, Max, psychologist, Berlin, III., IV., 12, 13, 18, 19, 45, 50, 51, 69, 79, 81, **123**, 128, 132, 185, 228, 229, **239**, 240, 241, 246, 259, 267, 272, 286, 333, 346, 348, 351, 364, 377
Devergie, Marie Guillaume Alphonse, 1798–1879, eminent authority on medical jurisprudence, Paris, 335
Dods, J. B., 13
Donato, Belgian magnetizer, 64, 356
Doolittle, 246
Dreher, formerly lecturer on philosophy at Halle, 18
Drosdow, W. J., 1881, lecturer at St. Petersburg, doctor, 207, 306
Drzewiecki, Stephan, teacher of mechanics, St. Petersburg, 41, 100
Dubois, Frederic, Amiens, member of the academy of medicine, doctor, 11
Duchenne, 1806–1875, French neurologist in Boulogne and Paris, founder of treatment by faradization, 76
Dufay, doctor, Blois, France, 208
Dufour, alienist and head physician at the asylum of St. Robert (Isère), 316
Dujardin-Beaumetz, doctor, physician, and medical author, Paris, 371
Dumas, Alexandre, the elder, 1803–1870, French novelist, 19
Dumesnil, 1711–1802, celebrated French actress, 135
Dumont, 1882, director of the laboratory at Nancy, 15
Dumontpallier, Amédée, physician, Paris, 15, 78, 79, 86, 95, 109, 143, 206
Duplouy, surgeon and head physician at the military hospital at Rochefort, 371
Dupotet, *see* Du Potet
Duprel, *see* Du Prel
Durand de Gros (Philips), French doctor, exiled by Napoleon III., 13, 134, 178, 259
Durville, H., magnetizer, Paris, 360

Eeden, F. van, doctor, Amsterdam, 16, 35
Elliotson, John, 1788–1863, eminent London physician, 12, 329
Ennemoser, Joseph, 1787–1854, doctor and professor in Bonn and Munich, 11
Epheyre (pseudonym of a great man of science), 19

Erb, W., prof., Heidelberg, eminent neurologist, 63
Erdmann, 1852, prof., Halle, psychologist, 204
Eschemayer, Karl August von, 1768–1852, philosopher, doctor, alienist, prof. of Tübingen, 9, 250
Esdaile, about 1840, surgeon at Calcutta, 329
Eslon, d', *see* Deslon
Esquirol, Jean, 1772–1840, eminent alienist, Paris, 202
Eulenburg, Albert, prof., lecturer in Berlin, neurologist, 15, 31
Ewald, K. A., prof. extraordinary, and physician, Berlin, 40, 47, 72, 199, 295, 297, 298, 301, 311, 312, 315
Exner, Siegm., prof. extraordinary and physiologist, Vienna, 197

Fanton, doctor, London, 13
Faraday, 1791–1867, eminent natural philosopher, 377
Faria, Abbé de, theologist and philosopher, ex-prof. Portuguese, lived in Goa and Paris, 10, 12, 28
Fechner, Gustav, 1801–1887, eminent physicist and psychologist, 226
Féré, Ch., neurologist and physician, Paris, 14, 28, 85, 103, 118, 131, 184, 202, 230, 235, 280, 281, 368, 369
Ferrari, Henri, Paris, 136
Ferrier, David, eminent neurologist, London, 268
Ferroni, doctor, Vienna, 165
Feuchtersleben, Ernst, Freiherr v., 1806–1849, doctor in Vienna, 296
Figuier, Louis, French author, 31
Fillassier, 1832, 105, 331
Fischer, Engelbert Lorenz, 1883, Würzburg, 1, 17, 216
Fischer, Fr., 1839, prof., Basle, 12
Fischer, P., doctor, Cottbus, 299
Flourens, Pierre, 1794–1867, physiologist, Paris, 266
Fludd, Robert,† 1637, doctor, mystic, London, 360
Focachon, apothecary, Charmes, 118
Foissac, P., 1825, doctor, Paris, 11
Follin, E., 1860, French surgeon, 14
Fontan, J., 1887, French naval doctor, Toulon, 49, 174
Fonvielle, W. de, French author, 164
Forbes, Henry O., 1886, naturalist, zoologist, traveller, Aberdeen, 208
Forel, August, prof., alienist, psychologist, histologist, Zürich, iii, iv, 17, 18, 19, 27, 33, 34, 35, 39, 40, 46, 47, 48, 49, 82, 109, **119**, **120**, 121, 131, 139, 144, 149, 150, 153, 155, 167, 171, 174, 189, 192, 197, 209, 216, 222, 224, 226, 232, 234, 264, 273, 294, **297**, 302, 306, 307, 315, 316, 317, 320, 322, 325, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 339, 346, 350, 353, 371, 377, 378
Förster, Richard, prof., oculist, Breslau, 269
Fort, le, surgeon, Paris, 330
Foureaux, lawyer, Charmes, 338
Fränkel, Danish doctor, 16
Fränkel, Moritz, doctor, Dessau, 17
Franck, *membre de l'Institut*, 338
Frank, doctor, alienist, Zürich, 131

Freud, Siegm., neurologist, doctor, Vienna, 18, 206
Frey, doctor, Vienna, 18
Freyer, Moritz, district medical officer, Darkehmen, 331
Friedberg, Hermann, 1817–1884, prof. extraordinary at Breslau, authority in medical jurisprudence, 294, 353
Friedemann, Julius, doctor, Cöpenick, 108, 319

Gall, Franz Joseph, 1758–1828, doctor, Vienna, later Paris; eminent anatomist and physiologist, founder of phrenology, 85
Gascard, doctor, Paris, 115
Gassner, Joh. Jos., 1727–1779, Catholic priest, well-known exorcist in Regensburg, Ellwang, &c., 291, 292
Gélineau, French doctor, 1880, 207
Gessmann, G., Vienna, 38
Gibert, doctor, Havre, 363
Gigot-Suard, Jaques, 1860, dermatologist, balneologist, doctor at Cauterets, Hautes Pyrénées, 29
Gilles de la Tourette, neurologist, assistant of Charcot, Paris, 14, 63, 78, 84, 301, 334, 337, 338, 353
Girard-Teulon, 1816 – 1887, oculist, Paris, 14, 111, 206, 347
Gley, Eugène, physiologist, Paris, 55
Gmelin, Eberhard, 1753–1809, physicist, Heilbronn, 8
Godenius, Rudolph, 1572–1621, doctor, professor of physics, Marburg, 4
Göler v. Ravensburg, art historian, Berlin, 362, 374
Görres, Jak. Jos. v., 1776–1848, prof., Munich, writer on mystical subjects, 216
Goethe, Joh. Wolfgang v., 1749–1832, 212
Goltdammer, *Ober-Tribunalsrath*, 336, 350
Goltz, prof., Strassburg, physiologist, 80
Grasset, prof., Montpellier, neurologist and pharmacologist, 38, 207, 323, 353
Gratiolet, Louis Pierre, 1815–1865, doctor and zoologist, comparative anatomist, Paris, 180
Greatrakes, Valentine, about 1770, "healer," Ireland, 291
Griesinger, Wilhelm, 1817–1868, alienist and physician, Berlin, 202, 206
Grimes, 1848, New England, U.S.A., 13
Grocco, 1882, Italian doctor, 371
Grützner, P., prof., Tübingen, physiologist, lecturer at Breslau in 1880, 86
Gscheidlen, R., 1842–1889, prof. extraordinary at Breslau, hygienist, chemist, 46
Guérineau, 1860, doctor, Poitiers, 14
Guermonprez, prof., doctor, Lille, 37
Gürtler, 1880, doctor, Sagan, 113
Guinon, neurologist, Paris, 304
Gurney, Edmund, 1847–1888, psychologist, secretary of the Society for Psychical Research, London, 17, 49, 72, 81, 99, 125, 139, 142, 143, 144, 147, 148, 149, 150 248, 250, 284, 364, 377
Guthrie, Malcolm, merchant, Liverpool, 363, 364, 375
Guttmann, S., doctor, Berlin, 295

Hack Tuke, *see* Tuke

Hähnle, Karl, doctor, Reutlingen, Würtemberg, 42
Hall, Stanley, prof. of University at Clark, United States, eminent physiologist and psychologist, 260
Haller, Albrecht v., 1708–1777, prof. of anatomy at Bern and Göttingen, 361
Hammond, prof., neurologist and alienist, New York, 208
Hansen, Danish magnetizer, 15, 39, 126, 304
Harting, 1882, prof. at Utrecht, 215
Hartmann, Eduard v., well-known philosopher, Gross-Lichterfelde, near Berlin, IV., 231, 255, 258, 361, 364
Harvey, William, 1578–1658, doctor and physiologist, London, 376
Heerwagen, Friedrich, Dorpat, 202
Heidenhain, August, doctor, Steglitz, 220
Heidenhain, R., prof. at Breslau, eminent physiologist, 15, 29, 45, 64, 67, 69, 72, 75, **79, 80**, 81, 82, 84, 85, 86, 89, 90, 111, 112, 125, 209, 257, 262, 263, 264, 267, 269, 287, 356, 366
Heineken, Joh., 1761–1851, doctor, Bremen, 8
Hell, Maximilian, Jesuit priest, astronomer, 360, 367
Hellich, Prague, 114
Hellwald, Friedr. v., author, Tölz, Bayern, 19, 32, 216, 329
Helmont, Joh. Baptist van, 1577-1644, celebrated doctor of Amsterdam and Brussels, 4, 367
Hément, Felix, *membre du Conseil, supérieur de l'instruction publique*, 332
Henrijean, surgeon, Liège, 118
Hensler, Philipp Ignaz, 1795–1861, prof., Würzburg, physiologist, 11
Hériart, 1865, French doctor, 335
Héricourt, J., Paris, 136
Herodotus, 484–424 B.C., Greek historian, 136
Herrero, Abdon-Sanchez, prof. of medicine, Valladolid, 35, 46
Hervas, Sancha, bishop, Madrid, 117
Hervey, 195
Herzog, 1853, 13
Hess, Julius, neurologist, Hamburg, 18
Heubel, Em., 1877, lecturer, Kiew, 214
Heyfelder, Johann, 1798–1869, surgeon and medical author, Petersburg, 14
Hildebrandt, Eduard, 216
Hippocrates, 460–364 B.C., "The Father of Medicine," 355
Hirschel, Bernhard, 1840, doctor, Dresden, 11
Hirt, prof. extraordinary, Breslau, neurologist, 18, 31, 273, 316, 317
Hoctès, 136
Hösslin, v., doctor, Neuwittelsbach, near Munich, 18
Hohenlohe, Prince, 1821, Catholic priest, Bavaria, 292
Horsley, Victor, surgeon, London, 108
Hublier, 1839, doctor, Borbeaux, 11
Huc, Gabriel, 1813–1860, French missionary, 32
Hückel, A., doctor, lecturer, Tübingen, 18, 81
Hufeland, Christoph Wilhelm, 1762–1836, prof., Berlin, eminent doctor, 9
Humboldt, Alexander v., 1769–

1859, celebrated naturalist, Paris, Berlin, 361
Hunter, John, 1728–1793, eminent English surgeon and anatomist, 291
Husson, Henri Marie, 1831, doctor, Paris, 11, 189
Hytten, 137

Jacolliot, Louis, French traveller, writer on occultism and student of Sanscrit, 216
Jäger, Gustav, zoologist, Stuttgart, 375
James, Constantin, French doctor, 309
James, William, prof., Cambridge, U.S.A., 99, 260
Janet, Jules, 78
Janet, Paul, philosophical writer, *membre de l'Institut*, Paris, 54
Janet, Pierre, psychologist, professor at Havre, 125, 139, 142, 173, 176, 185, 206, 227, 239, 248, 283, 284, 337, 363, 377
Jendrássik, Ernst, doctor, Buda-Pesth, 32, 84, 104, 115, 116, 140, 188, 268
Jensen, Julius, alienist, Charlottenburg, 206
Joachim, Heinrich, doctor, Berlin, 3
Jobart, 293
Jörg, Joh., 1779–1856, prof. obstetrician, Leipzig, 330
Joly, doctor, London, 13
Johannessen, Danish doctor, 16
Jong, de, Dutch doctor, 16, 316, 331
Jussieu, Antoine Laurent, 1748–1836, prof., physician, botanist, Paris, 6

Kaan, Hans, 1885, doctor, Graz, 269
Kant, Immanuel, 1724–1808, greatest German philosopher, 197, 222
Kayser, Richard, 1880, doctor, Breslau, 86
Kerner, Justinus, 1786–1862, lyric poet, doctor, Weinsberg, 5, 9
Kiaro, doctor, Poitiers, 13
Kieser, Dietrich Georg, 1779–1862, prof., alienist, Jena, 8, 334
Kiesewetter, historian, author, Meiningen, 1
Kircher, Athanasius, 1601–1680, Jesuit priest, Egyptologist, 213, 214, 367
Kluge, Karl, 1782–1844, doctor, prof., Berlin, 8, 51, 128, 139, 293, 364
Köberlin, Hermann, alienist, Erlangen, 18
Königshöfer, oculist, Stuttgart, 98
Konrád, Eugen, alienist, Hermannstadt, 295
Koreff, David Ferdinand, 1783–1851, eminent doctor, Berlin, Paris, 9
Krafft-Ebing, R. v., prof. at Vienna, eminent alienist and student of medical jurisprudence, 18, 19, 63, 93, 109, 112, 113, 115, 136, 139, 140, 169, 252, 253, 255, 273, 276, 316, 317, 318, 324, 326, 328, 333, 339
Krakauer, aurist, Berlin, 305
Kron, doctor, neurologist, Berlin, 51, 274
Kussmaul, former prof. and physician, Strassburg, now Heidelburg, 131

Laborde, French doctor, 31
Ladame, lecturer, neurologist, Geneva, 15, 316, 332, 336, 353

Lafforgue, French doctor, 336
Lafontaine, Ch., French magnetizer, 12, 37, 331
Landau, Leopold, gynœcologist and obstetrician, Berlin, 328
Landois, prof., physiologist, Greifswald, 264
Landouzy, prof. agrégé, physician, Paris, 35
Langley, J. N., physiologist, Cambridge, 19
Lasègue, Ch., 1816–1883, physician, Paris, 14, 33
Lanfenauer, prof., Buda-Pesth, alienist, 371
Laurent, Emile, doctor, Paris, 348
Lausanne, 1819, magnetizer, 293
Lavater, Joh. Casp., 1741–1801, theologian and physiognomist, Zürich, 8
Laverdant, 286
Laycock, 1860, prof., physician, psychologist, Edinburgh, 13
Leclerc, French lawyer, 332
Lefebvre, Ferd., prof., Löwen, pathologist, 117
Lefort, surgeon, Paris, 330
Leixner, O. v., author, Gross-Lichterfelde, near Berlin, 195, 262
Leonard, 1834, 163
Lépine, R., prof., Lyons, physician, 86
Levillain, doctor, Paris, 33
Lévy, E., doctor, Nancy, 209
Lewes, G. H., eminent psychologist, philosopher, and author, London, 81
Liébeault, doctor, Nancy, 14, 15, 26, 28, 34, 39, 49, 50, 69, 91, 115, 139, 158, 192, 201, 216, 232, 234, 246, 259, **290**, 293, **294**, 307, 331, 334, 335, 358, 359
Liégeois, lawyer, prof., Nancy, 15, 27, 143, 146, 158, 174, 209, 211, 334, 335, 336, **337**, 351
Lilienthal, C. v., prof., Marburg, lawyer, 18, 334, 341, 346, 347, 349
Liman, K., prof. extraordinary at Berlin, student of medical jurisprudence, 167, 283, 287
Lipp, prof. extraordinary at Graz, dermatologist, 116
Lisfranc, Jaques, 1790–1847, eminent surgeon, Paris, 329
Little, American doctor, 98
Lober, 1849–1888, *prof. agrégé*, physician, Lille, 63
Locke, John, 1632–1704, eminent philosopher, 252
Lombroso, Cesare, prof., Turin, alienist, anthropologist, 136, 348, 369
Londe, chemist, assistant to Charcot, 110
Lotze, Rudolph Hermann, 1817–1881, prof., Göttingen and Berlin, psychologist, 201, 271.
Loysel, 1845, doctor, Cherbourg, 13
Luther, Martin, 1483–1546, 255
Luys, alienist, neurologist, Paris, 29, 205, 370, 371

Maack, Ferd., doctor, Kiel, 18, 41
Mabille, H., alienist at the asylum of Lafond (Charente-Inférieure), 116, 129
Macario, 1857, Lyons, 167, 240
Macnish, Robert, 1801–1836, doctor, Glasgow, 161
Maggiorani, Carlo, physician and professor, Rome, 367
Magnin, Paul, French doctor, 78, 96
Maira, Octavio, doctor, Santiago, 17

Malten, E., 1880, 165
Mantegazza, Paolo, prof., anthropologist and ethnologist, Florence, 117, 283
Marès, Prague, 114
Marie, Pierre, neurologist, Paris, 260
Marin, Paul, 211
Marina, Alessandro R., 1887, doctor, Trieste, 89
Maudsley, eminent English alienist, 157, 339
Maury, Alfred, archæologist, Paris, 127, 195, 198
Maxwell, William, about 1600, Scotch doctor, 4
Mayerhofer, Austrian doctor, 362
Mayo, Herbert, 1854, English surgeon and physiologist, 13
Meding, Oscar, novelist, 19
Mendel, prof. extraordinary at Berlin, alienist, 267, 272, 273, 295, 299, 301, 302, 307, 308, 312, 315, 317, 324
Mendelsohn, 89
Mensi, Alfred v., author, Munich, 364
Méric, Elie, prof. at the Sorbonne, theologist, 118
Mesmer, Friedr. Anton, 1734–1815, doctor, Vienna, 4, 5, 6, 9, 30, 66, 305, 314, 356, 360, 361, 364
Mesnet, Ernest, alienist and physician, Paris, 331
Meunier, Victor, French author, 119
Meyersohn, Bernhard, 1880, doctor, Schwerin, 15
Meynert, prof., Vienna, alienist, 205, 295, 307
Michael, J., doctor, Hamburg, 18, 52, 356
Miescher, F., prof., Basle, physiologist, 222
Mill, John Stuart, 1806–1873, English philosopher and political economist, 230
Milne-Edwards, H., physiologist, Paris, 215
Minot, Charles Sedgwick, Boston, U.S.A., 374
Möbius, Paul Julius, lecturer, Leipzig, neurologist, 15, 17, 328, 351
Möli, Karl Franz, lecturer, alienist, Dalldorf, near Berlin, 206
Möllerup, Danish doctor, 316
Morand, J. S., French doctor, 38
Morel, celebrated French alienist, 339
Moricourt, J., doctor, Paris, 362
Morselli, prof., Turin, alienist, 47, 64, 89, 95, 356
Mosso, Aug., prof., Turin, physiologist, 269
Most, G. F., 1842, doctor, Stadthagen, 11
Motet, doctor, Paris, 208, 346
Mouillesaux, 1787, French magnetizer, 139
Müller, F., lecturer, neurologist, Graz, 18, 272, 325
Müller, F. C., doctor, Alexandersbad, 334, 335
Müller, Johannes, 1801-1859, eminent anatomist and physiologist, prof., Bonn and Berlin, 257
Münsterberg, Hugo, lecturer, psychologist at Freiberg in Baden, 19, 375
Myers, A., doctor, London, 364
Myers, Frederic W. H., psychologist, Cambridge, 17, 19, 35, 109, 117, 136, 248, 287, 364, 377

Nasse, Christian Friedrich, 1778-1851, prof., Halle and Bonn, physician, 250, 360
Netter, A., librarian of the University, Nancy, 332

Noizet, French general, 1820, Stenay, Paris, 10, 139, 165, 189
Nonne, doctor, neurologist, Hamburg, 18, 47, 74, 314
North, W., lecturer on physiology, London, 170, 220
Nuel, prof., Liège, oculist, 136

Obersteiner, H., prof. extraordinary at Vienna, alienist and histologist, 17, 38, 55, 70, 177, 216, 219, 220, 317, 370
O'Brien, 208
Ochorowicz, Julian, psychologist, Paris, 38, 107, 163, 208, 363
Oedmann, alienist, Lund, Sweden, 326
Œbers, 1758–1840, celebrated astronomer and doctor, Bremen, 8
Opitz, Wilhelm Martin, 1880, doctor, Chemnitz, 15
Oppenheim, Hermann, alienist, lecturer, Berlin, 315
Ottolenghi, Turin, 369
Oudet, Jean Etienne, 1837, dentist, Paris, 329

Paracelsus, Theophrastus, 1493–1541, eminent doctor at Basle and many other places, 4, 367
Parinaud, oculist, Paris, 280
Passavant, Joh. Karl, 1821, doctor, Frankfort, 8
Paulet, 1865, French doctor, 335
Pauly, doctor, Wiesbaden, 77, 302, 316
Perronnet, Claude, former prof. of philosophy, 363
Perty, Maximilian, 1804–1884, prof., Bern, naturalist and philosopher, 292
Pétetin, 1787, doctor, Lyons, 7
Pezold, 1789–1813, doctor, Dresden, 8
Pfaff, Christoph Heinrich, 1817, prof., Kiel, physician and surgeon, 8
Pflüger, E., prof., Bonn, eminent physiologist, 82
Pfnor, Friedrich, 1784–1867, philosopher, Baden-Baden, 12
Philips, pseudonym of Durand de Gros
Pick, A., 1885, alienist, prof., Prague, 293
Pigeaire, J., 1839, doctor, Paris, 11
Pincus, 1860, doctor, Gr. Glogau, 14
Pitres, A., prof., Bordeaux, physician, 15, 30, 35, 46, 173
Pliny, the elder, 23–79 A.D., Roman natural philosopher, 136
Poincelot, Achille, philosopher, Paris, 200
Poirault, Georges, student of medicine, Paris, 41, 100
Potet de Sennevoy, Baron Du, doctor, magnetizer in Paris and London, 11, 29, 37, 100, 329, 364
Pozzo, Errico Dal, prof. of physics, Perugia, 158
Préjalmini, 1840, Italian doctor, 118
Prel, Du, philosopher, writer on spiritualism, Munich, 110, 118, 122, 139, 250, 293, 359, 360, 364
Prévost, Geneva, 195
Preyer, William, prof., lecturer at Berlin, physiologist, 15, 19, 45, 47, 55, 86, 107, 111, 113, 195, 213, 214, 217, 268, 270, 329, 354, 364, 368

Pritzl, obstetrician, Vienna, 331
Proust, physician, Paris, 35
Pulido, doctor, Salamanca, 16
Purgotti, Luigi, 1887, doctor, Padua, 309
Purkinje, Johannes, 1787–1869, prof., physiologist, Breslau, Prague, 31, 203
Puységur, Marquis Chastenet de, 1784, French officer at Busancy, near Soissons, 7, 116, 360, 362

Radestock, Paul, 1879, psychologist, 158
Raggi, Antigono, Italian alienist, 369
Ramadier, J., alienist at the Asylum de Lafond (Charente Inferieure), 116
Récamier, J. C. A., 1821, prof. of medicine, physician, Paris, 329
Reden, Benno, 334
Regnard, French doctor, 14
Reichenbach, Carl Friedr. v., 1788–1869, naturalist, chemist, Leipzig, 367
Reil, Johann, 1759–1813, prof., Halle, physician and anatomist, 195, 361, 367
Remak, Ernst, lecturer, neurologist, Berlin, 294
Remak, Robert, 1815–1865, prof. extraordinary at Berlin, histologist and neurologist, founder of galvano-therapeutics, 294, 305
Renterghem, A. W. van, doctor, Amsterdam, 16, 35, 41
Repoud, alienist, director of Marsens Lunatic Asylum, Canton Freiburg, 317
Reynolds, Russell, neurologist, London, 63
Riant, A., French doctor, hygienist, 351
Ribaud, doctor, Poitiers, 13
Ribot, Th., prof., Paris, psychologist, 155
Ricard, 1841, magnetizer, 157
Richer, Paul, neurologist, Paris, assistant to Charcot, 14, 29 49, 63, 77, 78, 84, 181, 214
Richet, Charles, prof. of physiology in the university of Paris, 14, 19, 34, 55, 106, 112, 134, 136, 139, 152, 176, 200, 209, 214, 215, 259, 363
Rieger, prof., Würzburg, alienist, 18, 89, 204, 205, 214, 215, 301, 315
Rifat, doctor, Salonica, 35
Righi, Italian doctor, 370
Ringier, G., doctor, Combremont-le-Grand, Switzerland, 40, 41, 263
Rochas, A. de, 316, 360
Rosenbach, Ottomar, 1880, prof., Breslau, physician, 37, 265
Rosenthal, Moriz,† 1889, prof., Vienna, neurologist, 88, 108
Rossi, E., 1860, physician in ordinary to Prince Halim Pasha, Cairo, 1
Rostan, 30
Roth, doctor in Switzerland, 35
Roth, Mathias, homœopath in London, 328
Rousseau, 1881, French alienist, Auxerre, 35, 207
Roux, Jules, 1865, naval doctor, Toulon, 335
Roux - Freissineng, lawyer, Marseilles, 337
Rühlmann, Richard, 1880, prof., teacher at the Gymnasium, Chemnitz, 15
Rumpf, prof. extraordinary of medicine, Marburg, 90, 108, 269
Rust, Joh. Nepomuk, 1775–1840, prof., Berlin, surgeon, 248

Sallis, Joh. G., 1888, Baden-Baden, 18, 304
Salvioli, Gaetano, 1887, histologist, Turin, 269
Santanelli, Ferdinand, 1723, prof. of medicine, Naples, 4
Sauvaire, C., 101
Sawolshskaja, Russian doctor, 303
Schelling, 1775–1854, well-known philosopher, founder of the philosophy of nature, 8
Scherner, Carl Albert, lecturer at Breslau till 1879, 194
Schiller, Friedrich v., 1759–1805, 246
Schirmer, R., prof., Greifswald, oculist, 98
Schleisner, Danish doctor, 16
Schneider, G. H., 1880, 259
Schnitzler, Arthur, doctor, Vienna, 18
Schopenhauer, Arthur, 1788–1860, philosopher, Frankfort-on-the-Main, 21, 139, 364
Schrenck - Notzing, Albert, Baron v., doctor, Munich, 18, 302, 316, 320, 364
Schüle, Heinrich, eminent alienist, Illenau, Baden, 244
Schulz, Hugo, prof., Greifswald, pharmacologist, 353
Schuster, doctor, Aix, 18, 309
Schwartzer, Otto, 1878, alienist, Buda-Pesth, 167
Schwenter, 1636, 213
Scott, Walter, 1771–1832, Scotch author and poet, 194
Secheyron, doctor, Paris, 331
Seeligmüller, prof. extraordinary at Halle, neurologist, 18, 321, 332, 371
Ségard, Charles, 1887, doctor, Toulon, 49, 174
Séglas, J., alienist, Paris, 316
Seguin, prof., neurologist, New York, 371
Sell, Danish doctor, 16
Selle, 1789, philosopher, doctor, Berlin, 8
Sellin, Albrecht W., colonial director (retired), Steglitz, near Berlin, 185
Semal, François, alienist at the asylum of Mons, Belgium, 204
Senator, prof. extraordinary at Berlin, physician, 15
Seppilli, Gius, 1881, Modena, alienist, 78, 106, 269, 369
Sgrosso, Italian doctor, 91
Siemerling, alienist and lecturer, Berlin, 275, 276
Siemers, J. F., 1835, doctor, Hamburg, 11
Sierke, Eugen, 1874, writer, Berlin, editor of the *Täglichen Rundschau*, 291
Silva, B., Italian doctor, 85
Simon, Max, junior, alienist, head physician of the asylum at Bron (Rhone), 195, 202
Simonin, Amédée, H., 197
Simpson, James, 1811–1870, celebrated obstetrician, Edinburgh, 13
Socrates, 470–399 B.C., well-known Greek philosopher, 255
Sommer, G., Italian naval doctor, 369
Spencer, Herbert, eminent English philosopher, 222, 376
Sperling, Arthur, neurologist, Berlin, iv, 18, **32**, 35, 214, 274, 305, 309, 322, 326
Spinoza, 1632 – 1677, well-known philosopher, 155
Spitta, H., prof. extraordinary at Tübingen, psychologist, 31, 194
Spring, 31, 194
Stembo, neurologist, Wilna, 16, 77
Stewart, Dugald, 1753–1828,

celebrated philosopher, Edinburgh, 180, 230
Stieglitz, Johann, 1816, physician in ordinary at Hanover, 9
Stoll, Otto, lecturer on geography and ethnology at the polytechnic and university, Zürich, 2
Stone, 1852, Boston, 13
Stricker, prof., Vienna, pathologist, 55
Strohl, apothecary, Fontaines, 86
Strübing, Paul, 1880, doctor, prof., Greifswald, 113
Strümpell, prof., Erlangen, physician, 32
Sulzer, H. J., 1720–1779, art critic in Berlin, 5

Taguet, alienist, director of the Asylum de Lesvellec, near Vannes, 101
Taine, Hippolyte, French psychologist and historian of literature, 230, 377
Tamburini, August, 1881, prof. Modena, alienist, 78, 106, 269, 369, 370
Tanzi, Eugenio, alienist, Turin, 64, 369
Tarchanoff, Jean de, 30
Tardieu, Ambroise, 1818–1879, authority on medical jurisprudence, Paris, 335
Tereg, lecturer, Hanover, 89
Teste, Alphonse, 1840, doctor, Paris, 11
Thaler, Karl v., author, Vienna, 295
Théus, 1865, French doctor, 335
Thiem, doctor, Cottbus, 299
Thomas, surgeon-in-chief of the naval station at Toulon, 331
Thomsen, Robert, lecturer, alienist, Bonn, 315
Tillaux, surgeon at the Hôtel-Dieu, Paris, 330
Timmler, Julius Eduard, 1873, Altenburg, 292
Tokarski, doctor, Moscow, 16, 326
Tonnini, 1887, doctor, Girifalco, Calabria, 203
Topham, doctor, London, 13
Tourette, *see* Gilles de la Tourette
Treviranus, 1776–1837, famous doctor, physiologist, Bremen, 8
Tuckey, C. Lloyd, London, 318
Tuke, Daniel Hack, eminent alienist and psychologist, London, 17, 46, 170, 204, 224, 269, 281, 286, 330

Unverricht, prof., Dorpat, physician, 312, 355

Varges, 1853, 13
Varinard, 136
Varnhagen, von Ense, 1785–1858, well-known biographer, author, Berlin, 9
Varnier, doctor, Paris, 331
Velander, doctor, Jönköping, 16
Velpeau, Alfred, 1795–1867, eminent surgeon, Paris, 14
Ventra, Italian alienist, 369
Venturi, Silvio, prof., alienist, Nocera Inferiore, near Salerno, 369
Vesalius, Andreas, 1514–1564, doctor and eminent anatomist, 376
Vigouroux, Romain, neurologist and electro-therapeutist, Paris, 84
Virchow, Hans, prof. extraordinary at Berlin, anatomist and histologist, 198
Virchow, Rudolph, prof., Berlin, pathologist, anthropologist, 117, 297, 356, 376

Vizioli, Franc., neurologist, Naples, 207
Voigt, Hermann v., doctor, Hochweitzschen, Saxony, 330, 331
Voisin, A., alienist, Paris, 16, 39, 115, 316, 317, 332
Voisin, J., alienist, Paris, 116, 371
Voltaire, 1694–1778, French poet and author, 198

Wagner, J., American doctor, 30
Warlomont, Evarist, oculist at Brussels, 117
Weinhold, Adolph F., prof., teacher of physics at the state institute for technical education at Chemnitz, 15, 29, 31, 225
Weiss, M., doctor, Prague, 18
Welsch, Hermann, doctor, Kissingen, 364
Wernich, Councillor of Med., Cöslin, 198
Wernicke, Alex., lecturer at the technical college, Brunswick, writer on physics and philosophy, 222, 356, 374, 375
Westphal, Karl Friederich Otto, prof., Berlin, alienist and neurologist, 276, 368
Wetterstrand, doctor, Stockholm, 16, 40, 41, 77, 112, 316, 326, 332
Widmer, doctor, Lausanne, 332
Wiebe, 1884, doctor, Freiburg in Baden, 17
Wienholt, Arnold, 1749–1804, doctor, Bremen, 8, 50
Wier, Johann, 1515–1558, doctor, Arnheim, opponent of the witch prosecutions, 136
Willy, Charles, oculist, Chaux de Fonds, Switzerland, 98
Wilson, doctor, London, 216
Winiwarter, Alex. v., prof., Liège, surgeon, 118
Wirth, J. A., 1836, 39
Wolfart, Karl Christian, 1778–1832; prof. and doctor, Berlin, 5, 9, 10, 126
Wolfram, Johannes (pseudonym), 1821, 335
Wundt, Wilhelm, prof., psychologist, Leipzig, 196, 214, 226, 231, 244, 259
Wurm, Wilhelm, 1857 doctor, Munich, 9

Yung, E., prof., Geneva, 103, 225

Ziemssen, prof., Munich, physician, neurologist, 18, 272, 302, 307, 315
Ziermann, J. C. L., 1819, doctor, Hanover, 9

LITERARY INFORMATION.

As I have read nearly all the authors I have quoted in the original, it would take too much space to mention them in detail. There are catalogues for certain periods—for the movement of 1880, those of Möbius in Schmidt's *Jahrbüchern* and Max Dessoir's Bibliography of 1888; these are for the later periods. The bibliography is continued in the periodical *Revue de l'Hypnotisme.* The following is a list of works particularly to be recommended :—

BELFIORE, *L'Ipnotismo.* Naples, 1887. (Contains much historical information which is wanting in most French books.)

BENTIVEGNI, V., *Die Hypnose und ihre civilrechtliche Bedeutung.* Leipzig, 1890.

BERNHEIM, *De la suggestion et de ses applications à la thérapeutique.* (Shows the universal importance of suggestion with and without hypnosis. Written for doctors.)

BINET and FÉRÉ, *Le Magnétisme animal.* Paris, 1887. (Treats hypnotism from the point of view of the school of Charcot.)

DESSOIR, MAX, *Das Doppel-Ich.* Leipzig, 1890. (Short psychological studies, partly connected with hypnotic experiments.

ENNEMOSER, *Der Magnetismus.* Leipzig, 1819. (Contains much historical information about animal magnetism.)

FOREL, *Der Hypnotismus.* Stuttgart, 1889. (Short, very clear work, explaining the general importance of suggestion.)

GURNEY, Peculiarities of Certain Post-Hypnotic States (essay in the "Proceedings of the Society for Psychical Research," vol. iv., April 23, 1887). (Contains classical records of experiments, like almost all the works of Gurney and his friend Frederic Myers.)

JANET, PIERRE, *L'Automatisme psychologique.* Paris, 1889. (Detailed psychological experiments on human consciousness, its analysis by means of hypnosis, &c.)

KRAFFT-EBING, v., *Eine experimentelle Studie auf dem Gebiete des Hypnotismus*, 2nd ed. Stuttgart, 1889. (Contains a detailed account of many physical and mental symptoms of hypnosis in connection with an interesting case.)

LIÉBEAULT, *Du Sommeil.* Paris, 1866; new ed., 1889. (Psychological analysis of ordinary and hypnotic sleep. Much information.)

LIÉGEOIS, *De la suggestion et du somnambulisme dans leurs rapports avec la jurisprudence et la médecine légale.* Paris, 1888. (A rather diffuse book, containing much of deep interest.)

LILIENTHAL, v., *Der Hypnotismus und das Strafrecht.* Reprinted from the *Zeitschrift für die ges. Strafrechtswissenschaft*, 1887. (Based on the school of Charcot.)

MORSELLI, *Il Magnetismo animale.* Turin, 1886. (An interesting book, written from a determinist point of view.)

OCHOROWICZ, *De la suggestion mentale.* Paris, 1887. (Though the book does not prove telepathy convincingly, it is written with scientific earnestness, and is clever and interesting.)

THE WALTER SCOTT PRESS, NEWCASTLE-ON-TYNE.

43·24
86
172
1032

33
38
39

trace

→92<
101

University of Toronto
Library

DO NOT
REMOVE
THE
CARD
FROM
THIS
POCKET

Acme Library Card Pocket
LOWE-MARTIN CO. LIMITED